

€06801

ENGLISH-RUSSIAN

G R A M M ' A R

ENGLISH-RUSSIAN GRAMMAR

OR

PRINCIPLES

OF THE

RUSSIAN LANGUAGE

FOR THE USE OF THE ENGLISH

WITH SYNOPTICAL TABLES FOR THE DECLENSIONS AND CONJUGATIONS,
GRADUATED THEMES OR EXERCISES FOR THE APPLICATION OF THE
GRAMMATICAL RULES, THE CORRECT CONSTRUCTION OF THESE
EXERCISES AND THE ACCENTUATION OF ALL THE RUSSIAN WORDS

BY

CH. PH. REIFF

Fourth Edition carefully revised

WILLIAMS AND NORGATE,
14, HENRIETTA STREET, COVENT GARDEN, LONDON;
AND 20, SOUTH FREDERICK STREET, EDINBURGH.

1883.

°
for the use of strangers. This edition, completely remodelled, consists of two parts. The first is the Grammar properly so called, in which I have endeavoured to give the rules with a clearness and precision which may render their retention by the memory easy. The second part consists of *Themes* or graduated *Exercises* on each particular rule, where I have placed the Russian words below the English, to serve as vocabulary. The *solution* or *correct construction* of these Exercises will be found at the end of the Grammar.

In order to render the work as extensively useful as possible to foreigners, I have published it simultaneously in three languages, French, English and German. Philologists who may wish to see the subject treated more in detail, can consult my French translation of the Russian Grammar of Mr GRETSCH, under the title of *Grammaire raisonnée de la Langue russe, précédée d'une Introduction sur l'histoire de cet idiome, de son alphabet et de sa Grammaire*, and published at St-Petersburg in 1829.

CH. R.

Carlsruhe, September 1862.



PUBLISHER'S NOTE
TO THE FOURTH EDITION

IN the Fourth Edition of the English-Russian Grammar of the late CH. REIFF, which we now place before those who wish to acquire, by an easy way, a thorough knowledge of the principles of the Russian language, no changes and alterations have been made. There was no sufficient reason of modifying and remoulding a work, the practical character and admirable arrangement of which have been appreciated by more than one competent judge. The book thus being on the whole and in substance left in its original shape, particular attention could be given to the correctness of the edition both regarding typographical errors and the justness of language.—Great pains have also been taken to render the entrance of the study of Russian more accessive by adopting a phonetic method for the transcription of Russian words in English; in which regard the First Part of the grammar has undergone an entire renovation.

Mr. CHAMIZER-LENOIR, a linguist well-known by his deserving exertions in this province, has committed himself to the task; and this scholar did his best in preparing the work for the press, and in carefully revising the sheets as they passed through the same.

We hope that this handy and neat new edition of a book, which, in spite of some scientific shortcomings, "*has done and still can do real service*", will find the indulgence and patronage of the Public.

We feel at last much indebted to the Oriental Printing-Office of W. DRUGULIN for the excellent getting up and carrying through of this volume.

M. & Co.

RUSSIAN GRAMMAR

PART FIRST

LEXICOLOGY.

I.—THIS *Russian Grammar* is divided into four Division.
parts, viz:

- I. *Lexicology* (словопроизведе́ние), or words considered as sounds of the human voice and as the elements of speech.
- II. *Syntax* (словосочине́ние), or agreement and construction of words in sentences.
- III. *Orthography* (правописа́ние), or the proper use of letters to represent words.
- IV. *Prosody* (слоγοударе́ние), or *Orthoepy* (правоу́рѣіе), i. e. the manner of uttering words with regard to their accentuation.

Sounds
or Letters:

2.—It being the especial province of this science to explain every thing concerning the knowledge of words, it considers these first of all as mere sounds, and afterwards as the elements of speech. In respect then to mere sounds, words are composed of *letters* (*буквы*); and a collection of these letters or signs representing the particular sounds of which the words of a language are composed, is called *Alphabet* (*азбука*).

Alphabet

3.—The Russian Alphabet now in use contains 36 letters, the roman and italic *types* of which, as used in printing, also the *caligraphic characters* or hand-writing, with their modern and ancient *appellation*, and their corresponding *value* of sound, are represented in the following table.

The Russian Alphabet is borrowed from the ecclesiastical Slavonic, which besides contains the following eight letters:

Ѕ Ѣ Ѡ Ѧ Ѣ Ѧ Ѣ Ѧ

called ѢѠ, ѢѢ, ѠѢ, ѢѢ, Ѡ, Ѣ, ѢѢ, ѢѢ for which now
are substituted Ѣ, Ѣ, ѠѢ, ѢѢ, Ѡ, Ѣ, ѢѢ, ѢѢ.

The letter Ѣ has hitherto not been comprised among the number of the letters of the Alphabet; for which reason it is placed at the end of it.—Russian printers have for some time now pretty generally substituted the small capital Т for the common Ѣ, and this Т we have made use of, both in this Grammar and in our Dictionary.

RUSSIAN ALPHABET.

Types.		Caligraphic characters.		Appellation.		Value
<i>roman</i>	<i>italic</i>	<i>Running-hand.</i>	<i>Round-hand.</i>	<i>ancient</i>	<i>modern.</i>	<i>Proper Accidental sound.</i> <i>sound.</i>
1. А а	А а	А а	А, а ω	азъ	а	а е ѓ (far) (met) (no)
2. Б б	Б б	Б б	Б б	бѹки	бе	b p
3. В в	В в	В в	В в	вѣди	ве	v f
4. Г г	Г г	Г г	Г г	глаголь	ге	g, gh; k, h, kh, v
5. Д д	Д д	Д д	Д д	добрѡ	де	d t
6. Е е	Е е	Е е	Е е ѡ	есть	е	ya, a yo, o- (in yate, in yoke, gate) no
7. Ж ж	Ж ю	Ж ю	Ж ю	живѣте	же	zsh sh
8. З з	З з	З з	З з	земля	зе	z z
9. И и	И и	И и	И и ѡ	иже	и	ee, i ye (in pen)
10. І і	І і	І і	І і	і (десятерич- ное)		ee, i (in pen)
11. К к	К к	К к	К к	како	ка	k gh, kh
12. Л л	Л л	Л л	Л л	люди	эль	l, ll
13. М м	М м	М м	М м	мыслѣте	эмъ	m
14. Н н	Н ѣ	Н н	Н н	нашъ	энъ	n
15. О о	О о	О о	О о	онъ	ѡ	ō z (in far)
16. П п	П п	П п	П п	покой	пе	p
17. Р р	Р р	Р р	Р р	рцы	эръ	r
18. С с	С с	С с	С с	слово	асъ	s, ss z

Types.		Caligraphic characters.		Appellation.		Value.	
roman.	italic.	Round-hand.	Running-hand.	ancient.	modern.	Proper sound.	Accidental sound.
19. Т т	Т т	Т т	Т т	твёрдо	те	t	ѣ
20. У у	У у	У у	У у	у	у	oo, u	(intub)
21. Ф ф	Ф ф	Ф ф	Ф ф	ѣертъ	ѣѣ	f, ph	
22. Х х	Х х	Х х	Х х	хъръ	ха	kh, ch	
23. Ц ц	Ц ц	Ц ц	Ц ц	цы	це	ts	
24. Ч ч	Ч ч	Ч ч	Ч ч	червь	че	ch, tsh	sh
25. Ш ш	Ш ш	Ш ш	Ш ш	ша		sh	
26. Щ щ	Щ щ	Щ щ	Щ щ	ща		sh-tsh	sh
27. Ъ ъ	Ъ ъ	Ъ ъ	Ъ ъ	ъръ		e mute	
28. Ы ы	Ы ы	Ы ы	Ы ы	ыры		e thick	we
29. Ь ь	Ь ь	Ь ь	Ь ь	ъръ		y mute	
30. Ъ ъ	Ъ ъ	Ъ ъ	Ъ ъ	ять		yah, ā	yo
31. Э э	Э э	Э э	Э э	э		e (in met)	
32. Ю ю	Ю ю	Ю ю	Ю ю	ю		you	u Fr.
33. Я я	Я я	Я я	Я я	я		ya	ye, e (in yard) (in yet, met)
34. Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	ѳѳѳѳ		f	
35. Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	ѳѳѳѳ		ee, i	(in p m)
36. Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	ѳѳѳѳ		y	mute

RUSSIAN WRITTEN ALPHABET.

А а Ё ё И и М м Н н Ш ш
 Ъ Ѣ Ѥ Ѭ К к Л л У у Ф ф
 В в О о Ъ Ѣ Т т П п Д д
 Ы ы Р р З з Б б С с
 Е е Ъ Ѣ Ц ц Ч ч Я я
 Ж ж З з У у Ю ю
 И и Ф ф Я я
 Г г Х х О о
 К к Ц ц Ч ч
 Л л Ъ Ѣ Ы ы

Языкъ Русскій, будучи управленъ дарови
 нель и вурсаъ Писателя умнаго, мо-
 жеть равняться нель въ силъ красотъ
 и пріятности оъ лучшими языками
 древности и нашихъ временъ.

Division of
the letters.

4.—The 36 letters of the Russian alphabet contain 12 *vowels* (гласныя), viz: а, е, и, і, о, у, ы, ѣ, э, ю, я, ѵ, of which the following five: е, ѣ, я, ю, ы, may be called *diphthongs* (двугласныя); 3 *semi-vowels* (полу-гласныя): ъ, ь, ѣ, and 21 *consonants* (согласныя), viz: б, в, г, д, ж, з, к, л, м, н, п, р, с, т, ф, х, ц, ч, ш, щ, ѿ.

5.—The vowels and semi-vowels, with regard to their sounds, are *hard*, *soft* or *moderate*; and the consonants, according to their degree of intensity, are *strong*, *feeble* or *liquid*, viz:

I. VOWELS.		III. CONSONANTS.	
1. <i>Hard</i> : {and those corresponding}		1. <i>Strong</i> : {and those corresponding}	
2. <i>Soft</i> :		2. <i>Feeble</i> :	
а	я	п	б
э	е	ф	в
ы	ѣ, і	к	г (<i>g lat.</i>)
о	ѐ (<i>io</i>)	х	г (<i>h lat.</i>)
у	ю	ш	ж
3. <i>Moderate</i> :		т	д
ъ.		с	з
II. SEMI-VOWELS.		ц (тс) . (дз)	These three have no sign of their own.
1. <i>Hard</i> : {and those corresponding}		ч (тш) . (дж)	
2. <i>Soft</i> :		щ (штш) (ждж)	
3. <i>Liquid</i> .			
ѣ	ѣ, ѣ	л, м, н, р.	

6.—According to the particular organ of speech which gives utterance to the consonants, they are divided into:

1. *Gutturals* (гортанныя), pronounced in the throat:
г, к, х.
2. *Palatals* (поднёбныя), uttered by the palate:
л, н, р.
3. *Dentals* (зубныя), sounded by the aid of and against the teeth: д, т.

4. *Lingual* (язычная), articulated by means of applying the tongue closely to the upper teeth: ц.
5. *Labials* (губныя), produced between the lips:
• б, в, м, п, ф. •
6. *Lispings* (шепелеватыя), produced by a whistling of the tongue against the palate: з, с.
7. *Hissings* (шипящія), sounded by a whistling of the tongue against the root of the lower teeth:
ж, ч, ш, щ.

The vowel *у* and the consonant *ѳ* have not been included in the divisions, being found only in a few words taken from the Greek, and the former, with regard to pronunciation, being identical with *и*, and the latter with *ѳ*.

7.—In the foregoing table of the letters we have pointed out their *proper* and *accidental sounds*; the proper sound being the one they usually have, or when used separately, whereas they receive their accidental sound from a particular situation. This accidental sound, and more especially with regard to the vowels, depends upon the *tonic accent* (ударѣніе), of which more hereafter (§ 12).

Pronunciation of the letters.

The rules we are about to give of the pronunciation of the Russian letters, are taken from the dialect of Great-Russia, such as it is spoken at the Court, among the polished and literary world. Other dialects of the Russian tongue are those of Little-Russia, White-Russia, Novgorod, Soozdal and that of Olonetz; all of which however differ not more materially from the Moscovite dialect, than by their pronunciation and the use of some particular expressions.

8.—The vowels, in the Russian language, are Vowels. differently pronounced according to the place they occupy in a word, or as they are accented or not.

А, а.	Proper sound,	{ а (in <i>far</i>): азбука, <i>alphabet</i> ; каша, <i>oat-meal</i> .
	Accidental sound,	{ е (in <i>per</i>): ужасъ, <i>dread</i> ; часы, <i>watch</i> ; лошадь, <i>horse</i> . о (in <i>go</i>): большаго, <i>great</i> ; худо, <i>bad</i> .

• This vowel *a* is pronounced as *ah* or *a* (in *fat*); but: 1) It has the sound of short *e* after the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ) in the middle of a word, when not accented; at the end of words however, whether accented or not, it retains its proper sound.—2) In the termination *aro* of the genitive of adjectives, when accented, it has the sound of long *o*. Thus the above words are pronounced: *àhzbòoka*, *kàhsha*, *òòzshess*, *tshessèè*, *lòhshad*, *bàhlshòhva*, *khudòhva*.

Я, я.	Proper sound,	{ яа (in <i>yara</i>): яма, <i>ditch</i> ; мясо, <i>meat</i> ; земля, <i>earth</i> .
	Accidental sound,	{ ye, e (in <i>ya</i>): ядро, <i>kernel</i> ; дѣвать, <i>nine</i> .

The vowel *я*, when accented, has the sound of the diphthong *yah* (*yàhma*, *myàhso*, *zèmyah*); but if not accented, it is pronounced *ye* (in *yap*) at the beginning of words and syllables, and *e* (in *get*) after a consonant (*yadrò*, *dàvet*). At the end of words, whether accented or not, it preserves its proper sound; thus *зая*, *dawn*; *время*, *time*, are pronounced *zaryàh*, *vraìmyah*. The pronoun *ея*, *of her*, is pronounced *yayòh*, and the syllable *ся* of pronominal verbs is pronounced *sah* as: *стараться*, *to exert one's self* (*stahràhtsah*).

Е, е.	Proper sound,	{ ya, a (in <i>yate, gate</i>) единъ, <i>one</i> ; clé, <i>this</i> ; сердце, <i>heart</i> .
	Accidental sound,	{ yo, o (in <i>yoke</i>): берёза, <i>birch-tree</i> ; жёлтый, <i>yellow</i> .

At the beginning of words and syllables the vowel *e* is pronounced *yai*, but after a consonant purely as long *a* or short *e*; the above words therefore are pronounced *yaideèn*, *seeyaiè*, *saixtse*. This vowel, when accented, sounds like *yo* (in *yoke*), or, after a hissing and the lingual consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ, ц), like *oh* in the following cases, viz: 1) when standing before a consonant followed by one of the hard vowels, *a*, *o*, *y*, *ы*, *э*; 2) at the end of words; 3) in the termination *ею* or *еў* of the instrumental singular case of feminine nouns; 4) before the gutturals (г, к, х) or the simple hissing sounds (ж, ш), which do not allow of a hard vowel after them; 5) in the present tense of verbs, although followed by a soft vowel. Thus the words *ёлка*, *fir*; *слёзы*, *tears*; *ледъ*, *ice*; *жизнь*, *life*; *моё*, *my*; *землёю*, *by the earth*; *далёкій*, *distant*; *несёшь*, *thou carriest*; *несёте*, *you carry*; *шелкъ*, *silk*; *лицё*, *face*; *душёю*, *with the soul*, are pronounced *yòlka*, *slyòzee*, *lyot*, *zsheetyò*, *mah-yò*, *zamlyòyou*, *dalyòkee*, *nessyòsh*, *nessyòtai*, *shòlk*, *leetsò*, *dooshòyou*. It is this pronunciation *yo* or *o* that it is customary now to point out by a diæresis over the vowel *e*; *берёза*, *жёлтый*, *ёлка*, &c., and in this manner it has been distinguished, throughout this Grammar. This vowel *e* serves besides to give the French pronunciation of *eu*, as in *Монтескьё* (*Fr. Montesquieu*).

Ѣ, ѣ.	{	Proper sound,	{	ѣа, а (in <i>yate</i> , <i>gate</i>): ѣмъ, <i>I eat</i> ; ѣра, <i>faith</i>
		Accidental sound,	{	ѣо (in <i>yoke</i>): гнёзда, <i>nests</i> ; звёзды, <i>stars</i> .

• This vowel *ѣ* at the beginning of words and syllables sounds like *yai*; but after a consonant like long *a* or short *e* (*yaim*, *vaira*). However after the consonant *н*

the diphthongal sound is felt rather stronger; thus **нѣтъ**, *no*; **нѣмой**, *dumb*, are pronounced *nyet*, *nyamòy*. When accented, this vowel has the sound of *yoh* only in the words **гнѣзда**, *nests*; **звѣзды**, *stars*; **сѣдла**, *saddles*; **цвѣтъ**, *he flourished*; **обрѣтъ**, *he found*; also in their derivatives and compounds, as: **звѣздочка**, *little star*; **гнѣздышко**, *little nest*; **разцвѣлъ**, *it bloomed*; which are pronounced *gnyòhzhda*, *zvyòhzhdee*, *syòhdla*, *tsvyòll*, *ahbryòll*, *zvyòhzhdotshka*, *gnyòhzhdishko*, *rahztsvyòll*.

О, о. { Proper sound, о: **дóма**, *at home*; **пóслѣ**, *after*.
Accidental sound, ah: **хорóшó**, *well*; **колóколá**, *bells*.

The vowel *o*, when accented, keeps its proper sound; but if unaccented, it takes the sound of *ah*; wherefore the above words are pronounced *dòma*, *pòslai*, *kharahshòh*, *kalakalàh*. It must be observed however, that after an accented syllable, the sound of that vowel is extremely short; thus the word **кóлоколъ**, *bell*, is pronounced *kòhlokol* or *kòhl'k'l*.

И, и. { Proper sound, ee: **итти**, *to go*; **миръ**, *peace*.
Accidental sound, yee: **имъ**, *to them*; **стáты**, *articles*.

The vowel *u*, at the beginning of the various inflections of the pronoun of the third person (**имъ**, **ихъ**, **ими**), and after the semi-vowel *ь*, is pronounced as a diphthong, *yeem*, *yeèmee*, *yeehh*, *stahtyeè*. But in every other instance it preserves its proper sound, only that after a preposition terminating with the semi-vowel *ъ*, it takes the thick sound of *ы*, thus the words **въ избѣ**, *in the room*; **съ Иваномъ**, *with John*; **предыдущій**, *precedent*, are pronounced as if written **вызбы**, **сываномъ**, **предыдущій**.

Ы, ы. { Proper sound, e thick: **сынъ**, *son*; **льстецы**, *flatterers*.
Accidental sound, we: **грибы**, *mushrooms*; **мы**, *we*.

The sound of this vowel *u* is a thick utterance of *o*, and to get any thing like a perfect idea of this sound, it is necessary to hear it from the mouth of a Russian. After the labials (б, в, м, п, ф) it sounds very nearly like *we* pronounced very short; thus the words грибы, *mushrooms*; вы, *you*; мы, *we*; снопы, *sheaves*; шкафы, *cupboards*, are pronounced *grebwè, vwe, mwe, snapwè, sh'kafwè*. The Polish language represents this sound by the letter *y*.

Ю, ю. { Proper sound, you, long *u*: югъ, *south*; люблю, *I love*.
Accidental sound, u French: Брюссель, *Brussels*.

This vowel *ю* has properly the diphthongal sound *you* or long *u*; wherefore the pronounciation of the above words is *youk, lyoublyou*. In foreign words only it takes the place of the French *u*, as in the word Брюссель, *Brussels* (Fr. *Bruxelles*.)

И, и, У, у, Э, э, V, v.—These four vowels, whether accented or not, always keep their proper sound, as in the words иерей, *priest*; миръ, *the world*; ужинъ, *supper*; пагуба, *loss*; это́тъ, *this*; мѣро, *holy christ*, which are pronounced *yerèy, meer, oòzsheen, pàhgoobah, aítot, meèro*. For the use of *i* and *v* (instead of *u*) see Orthography.

9.—The semi-vowels (ѣ, ъ, й), which are placed, the two first after the consonants, and the last after the vowels, are only half uttered vowels, *ѣ* being half of the vowel *o*, and *ъ* or *й* half of the vowel *u*. Semi-vowels.

Ѣ, ѣ, Ъ, ъ.—The hard semi-vowel *ѣ* entails on the consonant that precedes it, a strong and harsh sound, as though that letter was double, and has even the effect of causing a feeble consonant to be pronounced like its strong corresponding sound;

thus the words: СТАНЪ, *shape*; ВЯЗЪ, *elm-tree*; ШЕСТЬ, *perch*; КРОВЬ, *roof*; СТОЛЬ, *table*; БРАТЬ, *brother*; ПЫЛЬ, *flame*; ГУСАРЬ, *hussar*; ОБЬ, *from*; ГЛАДЬ, *hunger*; СЕМЬ, *this*; ЦѢПЬ, *flail*, are pronounced *stann*, *vyass*, *shesst*, *krohff*, *stoll*, *brahtt*, *peel*, *goosàrr*, *ohpp*, *glahtt*, *semm*, *tsepp*. On the other hand, the soft semi-vowel *ѣ* confers a liquifying (*Fr. mouillé*) and slender sound on the preceding consonant; thus the words: СТАНЬ, *become*, ВЯЗЬ, *marsh*; ШЕСТЬ, *six*; КРОВЬ, *blood*; СТОЛЬ, *so much*; БРАТЬ, *to take*; ПЫЛЬ, *dust*; ГУСАРЬ, *goose-herd*; ОБЬ, *the Obi*; ГЛАДЬ, *smoth road*; СЕМЬ, *seven*; ЦѢПЬ, *chain*, are pronounced *stahnʹi* (like *gn* in the French *Allemagne*), *vyazʹi*, *shesstʹi*, *krovʹi*, *stohlʹi*, *brahtʹi*, *peelʹi*, *goosàri*, *ohbʹ*, *glàdʹi*, *semʹi*, *tsepʹi*, by causing the *i* to be slightly vibrated and to expire, as it were, within the mouth; the sound and the mechanism for producing it, being closely allied to what is heard in the French words *péril*, *soleil*, *campagne*, *cigogne*, *ligne*. After the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ) the sounds of the semi-vowels *ѣ* and *ь* are the same and differ in nothing from each other; thus the words НОЖЬ, *knife*, and РОЖЬ, *rye*; МЕЧЬ, *sword*, and СѢЧЬ, *to cut*; КАМЫШЬ, *reed*, and МЫШЬ, *mouse*; ТОЩЬ, *fasting*, and НОШЬ, *night*. are pronounced *nohsh* and *rohsh*, *metch* and *setch*, *kahmeèsh* and *meesh*, *tohshʹtsh* and *nohshʹtsh*.

Й, ѣ.—The soft semi-vowel *ѣ* is pronounced very rapidly and short along with the vowel that precedes it, and with which it formes but one syllable; thus the words ДАЙ, *give*; ПЕЙ, *drink*; МОЙ, *my*; ЖУЙ, *chew*; ВѢЙ, *blow*; КАРИЙ, *brownbay*, are pro-

nounced *da'*, or like *di* in *die*, *pe'*, *mo'*, *zshu'*, *va'*, *kare'*, givin gutterance to a short *i* after the vowel.

10.—The consonants, in the Russian language, Consonants. as will be seen below, have also various sounds, viz:

Б, б.	} Proper sound,	} Accidental sound,	<i>b</i> : баба, <i>old woman</i> ; бобъ, <i>bean</i> ; бабка, <i>cockle</i> .
В, в.			<i>v</i> : вонъ, <i>away</i> ; ровъ, <i>ditch</i> ; вторникъ, <i>Tuesday</i> .
Д, д.			<i>t</i> : дно, <i>bottom</i> ; родъ, <i>kind</i> ; водка, <i>brandy</i> .
Ж, ж.			<i>sh</i> : жду, <i>I wait</i> ; мужъ, <i>husband</i> ; ложка, <i>spoon</i> .
З, з.			<i>s</i> : звонъ, <i>sound</i> ; глазъ, <i>eye</i> ; сказка, <i>story</i> .

The feeble consonants б, в, д, ж, з, retain their proper sound before the vowels, before the liquid and other feeble consonants, observing that ж (French *j*) is now represented in English by *zsh*. But before the strong consonants and at the end of words terminating in the hard semi-vowel (ъ), they assume the utterance of their corresponding strong letters (п, ф, т, ш, с). Thus the above words are pronounced *bàbah*, *bohph*, *bàphka*, *vohnny*, *rohff*, *fiòhrneek*, *dno*, *rott*, *vòhtkah*, *zsh'doo*, *moosh*, *òhshkah*, *zvonn*, *glahss*, *skàska*. In words where зд is followed by н, the letter д is silent: thus поздно, *late*; праздникъ, *feast*, are pronounced *pòhznò*, *pràhznèek*. The word дождикъ, *rain*, is pronounced *dòhzhsh'zsheek*.

Г, г.	} Proper sound, <i>g gh</i> : гора, <i>mountain</i> ; погибель, <i>perdition</i> .	
		} Accidental sound,
		<i>k</i> : другъ, <i>friend</i> ; möglich, <i>who could</i> .
		<i>h</i> : Господь, <i>Lord</i> ; Бóга, <i>of God</i> .
		<i>kh</i> , <i>ch</i> : Богъ, <i>God</i> ; лёгкiй, <i>light</i> .
		<i>v</i> : краснаго, <i>red</i> ; егó, <i>of him</i> .

In the beginning and in the middle of words the consonant *g* preserves its proper sound, being articulated with a slight vocalized aspiration, something like the Hibernian *g* when pronounced hard (*gharàh*,

The compound consonant *ш* (штш), which has the three distinct sounds of *sh-t-sh* or *s-t-sh*, and which the Poles represent by *szcz*, has the simple sound of *ш* before the consonant *н*; the above words consequently are pronounced *sh'tshitt*, or *stchitt*, *òhvosh'tsh*, and *akhvahshnòy*, *pakhmòhshnik*.

П, п.	}	. . . . .	{	р: павлѣнъ, <i>pea-cock</i> ; столпъ, <i>column</i> .
Ф, ф.				ф or ph: фонарь, <i>lantern</i> ; скуфья, <i>scull-cap</i> .
Х, х.	}	. . . . .	{	kh, Germ. th: храмъ, <i>temple</i> ; духъ, <i>odour</i> .
Ш, ш.				sh, Fr. ch, Germ. sch, Pol. sz: шалашъ, <i>cottage</i> .
Ц, ц.	}	. . . . .	{	ts, Germ. z: царь, <i>king</i> ; перецъ, <i>pepper</i> .
Ө, ө.				f: театръ, <i>theatre</i> ; Аѳѣны, <i>Athens</i> .

Thesesix strong consonants keep their proper sound, and consequently the above words are pronounced *pa-vleèn*, *stohlp*, *fahnàr*, *schoofyà*, *khrahmm*, *dookh*, *shah-làsh*, *tsar*, *pàhrets*, *fe-àht'r*, *afeènee*, observing that *x* is pronounced as in the Scotch *loch* or German *Quach*. For the use of the consonant *ө*, which is pronounced the same as *ф*, see Orthography.

Л, л.	}	. . . . .	{	l: ладъ, <i>accord</i> ; лядъ, <i>ill-luck</i> .
М, м.				m: всемъ, <i>to all</i> ; вóсемъ, <i>eight</i> .
Н, н.				n: троңъ, <i>throne</i> ; тронъ, <i>touch</i> .
Р, р.				r: радъ, <i>glad</i> ; рядъ, <i>rank</i> .

The liquid consonants preserve their proper sound, being strong or soft in their utterance according to the vowel or semi-vowel that follows; consequently the above words are pronounced *latt* and *lyat*, *vsaimm* and *vòhsem*; *trohnn* and *tron'*; *rahtt* and *ryahtt*. It is necessary to observe here that the Russian consonant *л*, before the hard vowels and strong con-

sonants, by no means resembles the usual English *l*, in as much as in that situation it is pronounced with much greater force, and which is obtained by a strong pressure of the tongue against the upper teeth. The Poles represent this sound by *l* with a bar (*ł*). The other three sounds correspond with those of the English language, only that the *p* has a stronger trill, partaking more of the Irish utterance of this letter.

11.—A vowel, either by itself, or joined to one or more consonants, with or without a semi-vowel, forms, in the Russian language, a *syllable* (сло́гъ, складъ); and one or several of these, used to represent a thought or sensation, form a word (сло́во). Words consequently may be *monosyllables* (одно-сло́жныя) or *polysyllables* (многосло́жныя), according to their being compounded of one or more syllables, as: и, *and*; я, *I*; онъ, *he*; аѣ, *ah*; сей, *this*; два, *two*; страхъ, *fright*; зи-ма́, *winter*; до-ро́-га, *road*; до-бро-дѣ-тель, *virtue*; до-бро-дѣ-тель-ный, *virtuous*, &c.

Syllable
and word

The Russian language contains a few words that have no vowel at all, or whose vowel has changed into a semi-vowel; such are the particles въ, къ, съ, бѣ, жѣ, лѣ (instead of *eo*, *ko*, *so*, *by*, *me*, *lu*). These words, called *assyllables* (безсло́жныя), are joined to the syllables of the preceding or following word, as: въ домъ, *in the house*; къ окнѣ, *towards the window*; съ тобою, *with thee*; если бѣ, *if*; однако жѣ, *however*; точно лѣ, *is it right so?*

12.—In polysyllabic words there is always one syllable that experiences a greater stress of the voice than the rest; thus in the words ма́ло, *little*; го-то́во, *ready*; гово́рите, *speak*, the syllables ма, то, ри, are more discernably audible than the syllables

Tonic
accent.

lo, 2o, 3o, me. This modification of the voice is in fact what is meant by *tonic accent* (ударѣніе), and is indicated by a little mark over the vowel. The accented syllable is called *long* (дóлгий), the others *short* (кράткіе).

The accent is no longer printed in Russian books, except to distinguish some homonymous words and grammatical inflections of similar forms, as зámокъ, *castle*, and замóкъ, *lock*; слóва, *of the word* (gen. sing.), and словá, *words* (nomin. plur.), as will be seen in Part IV, Prosody. It is here the place to observe that in the Russian language there is no rule by which to determine the accent, and that in one and the same word it is frequently shifted from one syllable to another; for which reason all the words used in this Grammar are printed with the accent they ought to have.

The following *Reading-exercise*, in which the reading of the Russian text is facilitated by an imitation of the sounds according to English utterance, and an interlinear literal translation added, it is confidentially hoped, will materially assist the learner to make himself master of the rules we have given on the pronunciation of the letters and words of the Russian language.

READING-EXERCISE.

Вчерá	въ	шестъ	часóвъ	ýтра	по́ехали	мы
Ftshera	f	shest	tshessoff	ootra	pah-yaikhalee	mwe
Yesterday	at	six	o'clock	of the morning	went	we

верхóмъ	въ	Пóтсдамъ.	Ничегó	нѣтъ	скучнѣе	этой
verkhómm	f	Potsdam	Neetshaivo	nyet	skooshnaíyay	altoy
on horseback	to	Potsdam.	Nothing	there is	duller	than this

дорóги:	вездѣ	глубóкій	песóкъ,	и	ни	какіхъ	занимáтель-
lahróghee:	verdai	gloobohkee	pessók,	ee	neekahkeekh	zaneemahtel-	
road:	every where	a deep	sand,	and not	any	interest-	

ныхъ	предмѣтовъ	въ	глазá	не	попада́ется.	Но	видѣ
ieskh	praidmaltoff	v'	glahzah	nai	pahpahdayetsah.	No	veet
ing	object	to	the eyes	not	presents itself.	But	the sight

Пóтсдама, а особли́во Санъ-Суси́, о́чень хоро́шѣ. Мы
 Potsdahmah, ah ahsahbleévo San-Sooosée, ótshain kharòsh. Mwe
of Potsdam, and above all of Sans-Souci, (is) very fine. We

останови́лись въ тракти́рѣ, не до́вѣжая до городскі́хъ воро́тъ.
 ahstahnahveélees f' trakteérai, nau da-yaizsh 'zshàyah da garadskeékh vahrot.
stopped at the hotel, not arriving to, the city- gates.

Отдохну́въ и заказа́въ, о́бѣдъ, мы пошлѣ́ въ
 Addakhnoov ee zakazahv ahbyaid, mwe pashlee v'
Having rested ourselves and ordered a dinner, we went into

гóродъ. У воро́тъ записа́ли на́ши именá. На парáдномъ
 gorot. oo varot zahpeesahlee nashee eemannah. Nah parahdnom
the town. At the gates one wrote our names. On the parade-

мѣстѣ́ протѣ́въ дворца́, у́чили́сь гв́ардія: прѣ́красны́е
 maistai prohteef dvahrtsah, ootslélahs gvahrdyah praikrahnsneeyai
place opposite the palace, exercised the guards: very fine

лю́ди, прѣ́красны́е му́ндиры! Видѣ́ дворца́ со
 lyoudee, praikrahnsneeyai moondeeree' Veed dvahrtsah sah
men, superb uniforms! The sight of the palace from

сторо́ны са́да о́чень хоро́шѣ. Гóродъ, вооб́щѣ
 starahneé sahda otshain kharosh. Ghorod vah-ahbstshai
the side of the garden (is) very fine. The town in general

прѣ́красно вы́строены́; въ большóй у́лицѣ́ мнóго
 praikrahnsno vwestroyain, v' bahlshoy ooleetsai mnogo
(is) well built; in the great street (there are) many

великолѣ́пныхъ домо́въ, стро́енныхъ отча́сти по образц́у
 vaileekahlapneekh dahmòf, stroyanneekh attshahstee pah ahbrahtsoo
of magnificent houses, built partly on the model

огрoмнѣ́йшихъ римскі́хъ пала́тъ и на со́бственны́хъ де́ньги
 agtomneysheekh reemskeekh pahlaht ee na sòbstvainneeyah deýnghee
of the vastest Roman palaces and at the own expences

поко́йнаго коро́ля: онъ дари́лъ ихъ, кому́ хотѣ́лъ. Тепѣ́рь
 rakòynahvah kahràyah on dareél yeekh, kamoo khahtail. Taiper
of the late king: he gave them, to whom he chose. Now

сѣи * огромныя зданія пусты, или занимаются
seeeyè agròmneeyah zdáhneeyah poòstee, eeleè zaneemàhyootsah
the vast edifices (are) empty, or are occupied

солдатами. — Въ Потсдамѣ есть русская церковь подъ
sahldàhtamee. — F' Pòtsdahmai yest roòskayah tsairkov pahd
by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under

надзираниемъ стараго русскаго солдата, который живётъ
nahdzeeráhneeyem starahvah rooskahvah sahldàtah, kahtoree zsheev'yòtt
the care of an old Russian soldier, who lives

тамъ со времёнъ царствования Императрицы Анны. Мы
tahm sah vraimain tsàrstvovaneeyah eemperatreetsee àhnnee. Mwe
there since the times of the reign of the empress Anne. We

насилу могли сыскать его. Дряхлый старикъ
nahseèloo maghleè seeskaht yaivo. Dr'yàkhloe stahreèk
with difficulty could find him. The decrepit old man

сидѣлъ на большихъ креслахъ, и услышавъ, что
seedail na bahlsheèkh kreslahkh, ee oosleèshahv shto
was sitting in a large arm-chair, and having heard that

мы Русскіе, протянулъ къ намъ руки, и
mwe rooskeeyai, prahtyahnool k' nahm rookee. ee
we (are) Russians, he extended towards us the hands, and

дрожащимъ голосомъ сказалъ: Слава Бѣгу! Слава Бѣгу!
drahzahàstsheem golossom skahzahl: slavah Bohoo! slàvah Bohoo!
with a trembling voice he said: Glory to God! Glory to God!

Онъ хотѣлъ говорить сперва съ нами по-русски: но мы
ohn khahtail gahvahreèt spervah s' nàhmee pah-rooskee: no mwe
He wanted to speak at first with us in Russian: but we

съ трудомъ могли разумѣть другъ друга. Намъ надлежало
s' troodòm mahgleè rahzoomait droog droogah. Nam nahdlaizshàhlo
with difficulty could understand each other. To us it was obliged

повторять почти каждое слово. „Пойдѣмте въ церковь
pahvtahryàht pahstheetè kàzhdayai slovo. „Pie-dyòmtai f' tsairkov
to repeat almost each word. „Let us go into the church

Божію, сказа́лъ онъ, и помо́лимся вмѣстѣ, хот́я ны́нѣ
 Bòzsheeyou, skahzáhl on, ee pahmòhleemsa vmaistai, khahtyáhl neénai
of God, said he, and let us pray together, although to-day

и нѣтъ праздника. Сердце моё наполнилось
 ee n'yet prázneekah. "Sairtse mah-yòh napòhlneelos
even there is not any holiday. Heart my filled itself

благоговѣніемъ, когда отворилась дверь въ церковь,
 blahaghavaineeyaim, kaghdá ahtvareelas dvair f' tsairkov,
with devotion, when opened itself the door into the church,

гдѣ столько времени царствуетъ глубокое молчаніе,
 ghdyai stòlko vralmainee tsàrstvooyet gloobokoyai mahltsànecyay.
where so much of time reigns a profound silence,

едва перерываемое слабыми вздохами и тихимъ голосомъ
 yaidváh perereeváyaimoyai slàhbemee vzdohkhahmee ee teekheem ghòlossom
hardly interrupted by the feeble groans and the soft voice

старца, который по воскресеньямъ приходитъ туда читать
 stàrtsah, kahtoohree pah vahskraisainyahm preekhohdeet toodah tsheetàht
of old man, who on the sundays comes there to read

святѣйшую изъ книгъ, приготовляющую его къ
 svyahtèyshooyou eez kneegh, preegahtahvlyâyoustshooyou yaivoh k'
the most holy of the books, preparing him to

блаженной вѣчности. Въ церкви всё чисто. Церковныя
 blahzhainnoy valtsnostee. F' tsairkvee fsyo tshèesto. Tsairkovneeyah
the happy eternity. In the church all (is) clean. Church-

книги и утварь хранятся въ сундукѣ. Отъ времени до
 kneeghee ee oòtvahr khrahnyàtsah f' soondookai. Aht vralmenee doh
books and ornaments are kept in a trunk. From time to

времени старикъ перебираетъ ихъ съ молитвою. „Часто
 vralmainee stahreèk perebeeràyait yeeekh s' mahleètvoyou. „Tshàsto
time the old man arranges them with prayer. „Often

отъ всего сердца, сказа́лъ онъ, сокрушаюсь я о томъ, что
 aht fsaivò sairtsah, skahzáhl on, sahkreosháyous yah ah tomm, shto
from all the heart, said he, grieve myself I of that, that

сѣи ' огромныя зданія пусты, или занимаются
seeyee agrómneeyah zdáhneeyah poósteē, eelée zaneemáhyootsah
the vast edifices (are) empty, or are occupied

солдатами. — Въ Потсдамѣ есть русская церковь подъ
sahldáhtamee. — F' Pótsdahmai yest roóskayah tsairkov pahd
by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under

надзираниѣмъ стараго русскаго солдата, который живётъ
nahdzeeráhneeyem stárahvah rooskahvah sahldatah, kahtoree zsheev'yott
the care of an old Russian soldier, who lives

тамъ со времѣнъ царствованія Императрицы Анны. Мы
tahm sah vraimain tsarstvovanceyah eemperatreetsee áhnnee. Mwe
there since the times of the reign of the empress Anne. We

насилу могли сыскать его. Дряхлый старикъ
nahseeloo maghleē seeskaht, yaivo. Dr'yákhlee stahreék
with difficulty could find him. The decrepit old man

сидѣлъ на большихъ креслахъ, и услышавъ, что
seedail na bahlsheekh krèslakhk, ee oosleëshahv shto
was sitting in a large arm-chair, and having heard that

мы Русские, протянулъ къ намъ руки, и
mwe rooskeeyai, prahtyahnool k' nahm rookee, ee
we (are) Russians, he extended towards us the hands, and

дрожащимъ голосомъ сказалъ: Слава Бѣгу! Слава Бѣгу!
drahzhástsheem golossom skahzáhl: slavah Bohoo! slávah Bohoo!
with a trembling voice he said: Glory to God! Glory to God!

Онъ хотѣлъ говорить сперва съ нами по-русски: но мы
ohn khahtail gahvahreēt spervah s' náhmeē pah-rooskee: no mwe
He wanted to speak at first with us in Russian: but we

съ трудомъ могли разумѣть другъ друга. Намъ надлежало
s' troodóm mahgleē rahzoomait droog droogah. Nam nahdlaizsháhlo
with difficulty could understand each other. To us it was obliged

повторять почти каждое слово. „Пойдѣмте въ церковь
pahvtahryáht pahsttee kázhdoyai slovo. „Pie-dyómtai f' tsairkov
to repeat almost each word. „Let us go into the church

БОЖІЮ, СКАЗАЛЪ ОНЪ, И ПОМОЛИМСЯ ВМѢСТѢ, ХОТЯ НЫНѢ
 Bôzsheeyou, skahzâhl on, ee rahmôhleemsa vmaistai, khahtyah neēnai
of God, said he, and let us pray together, although to-day

И НѢТЪ ПРАЗДНИКА.“ СЕРДЦЕ МОЁ НАПОЛНИЛОСЬ
 ee n'yet prâzneekah.“ Sairtse mah-yoh napôhlnceelos
even there is not any holiday.“ Heart my filled itself

БЛАГОГОВѢНІЕМЪ, КОГДА ОТВОРИЛАСЬ ДВЕРЬ ВЪ ЦѢРКОВЬ,
 blahagahvaineeyaim, kaghda ahtvareēlas dvair f' tsairkov,
with devotion, when opened itself the door into the church,

ГДѢ СТОЛЬКО ВРЕМЕНИ ЦАРСТВУЕТЪ ГЛУБОКОЕ МОЛЧАНІЕ,
 ghdyai stolko vramainee tsarstvooyet gloobokoyai mahltshaneeyai.
where so much of time reigns a profound silence,

ЕДВА ПЕРЕРЫВАЕМОЕ СЛАБЫМИ ВЗДÔХАМИ И ТИХИМЪ ГОЛОСОМЪ
 yaidvah pererevayaimoyai slahbemee vzdohkhahmee ee teekheem gholossom
hardly interrupted by the feeble groans and the soft voice

СТАРЦА, КОТОРЫЙ ПО ВОСКРЕСѢНІЯМЪ ПРИХОДИТЬ ТУДА ЧИТАТЬ
 startsah, kahtohree pah vahskraisainyahm preekhohdeet toodah tsheetaht
of old man, who on the sundays comes there to read

СВЯТѢЙШУЮ ИЗЪ КНИГЪ, ПРИГOTOВЛЯЮЩУЮ ЕГО КЪ
 svahteysheeyou eez kneegh, preegahtahvliyayoustshooyou yavoh k'
the most holy of the books, preparing him to

БЛАЖЕННОЙ ВѢЧНОСТИ. ВЪ ЦѢРКВИ ВСЁ ЧИСТО. ЦЕРКОВНЫЯ
 blahzshainnoy vaitsnostee. F' tsairkvee fsyo tsheesto. Tsairkovneeyah
the happy eternity. In the church all (is) clean. Church-

КНИГИ И УТВАРЬ ХРАНЯТСЯ ВЪ СУНДУКѢ. ОТЪ ВРЕМЕНИ ДО
 kneeghee ee ootvahr khrahnyatsah f' soondookai. Aht vramenee doh
books and ornaments are kept in a trunk. From time to

ВРЕМЕНИ СТАРИКЪ ПЕРЕБИРАЕТЪ ИХЪ СЪ МОЛИТВОЮ. „ЧАСТО
 vramainee stahreēk perebeerayait yeeekh s' mahleetvoyou. „Tshasto
time the old man arranges them with prayer. „Often

ОТЪ ВСЕГО СЕРДЦА, СКАЗАЛЪ ОНЪ, СОКРУШАЮСЯ Я О ТОМЪ, ЧТО
 aht fsarvô sairtsah, skahzâhl on, sahkrooshâyous yah ah tomm, shto
from all the heart, said he, grieve myself I of that, that

ПО СМЕРТИ МОЕЙ, КОТОРАЯ ОТЪ МЕНЯ КОНЕЧНО УЖЕ НЕ
 pah smairtee mah-yèy, kahtorayah aht mainyàh kahnaishno oozshai nai
after death my, which from me certainly already not (is)

ДАЛЕКО, НЕ КОМУ БУДЕТЪ СМОТРѢТЬ ЗА ЦЕРКОВЬЮ.“ — СЪ
 dahlyohko, nai kahmoo boodait shmahtrait zah tsairkovyuu.“ — S
far, no person will watch over the church.“ — During

ПОЛЧАСА ПРОБЫЛИ МЫ ВЪ СЕМЪ СВЯЩЕННОМЪ МѢСТѢ,
 poltshahsa probwelee mwę f' saim svyahststshainnom malstai,
half an hour remained we in this holy spot,

ПРОСТИЛИСЬ СЪ ПОЧТЕННЫМЪ СТАРИКОМЪ, И ПОЖЕЛАЛИ ЕМУ
 prahsteèles s' pahstshainneem stahreekom, ee pahzshailàlee yaimoo
bade farewell with the venerable old man, and wished him

ТИХОЙ СМЕРТИ.
 tèekhoy smairtee.
an easy death.

Карамзинъ.
 Kahrahmzeèn.

Elements
 of speech.

13.—Words, when considered as the elements of speech, are either *denominative* (знаменательныя) or *auxiliary* (служебныя). The former express the idea of objects, of their qualities or actions; the latter merely design the connexion that exists among the denominative words; thus in this phrase: Птицы летаютъ по воздуху, а рыбы живутъ въ водѣ, *birds fly in the air, and fishes live in water*, the denominative words are: *птицы, летаютъ, воздуху, рыбы, живутъ, водѣ*, and the auxiliary words are: *по, а, въ*. The former are called the *parts* (части), and the latter the *particles of speech* (частицы рѣчи). The parts and particles of speech, in the Russian language, may be brought under nine different heads; namely:

I. PARTS OF SPEECH:

1. The *substantive* (имя существительное).
2. The *adjective* (имя прилагательное).
3. The *pronoun* (мѣстоимѣніе).
4. The *verb* (глаголь).
5. The *participle* (причастіе).
6. The *adverb* (нарѣчіе) and the *gerund* (дѣепричастіе).

II. PARTICLES OF SPEECH:

7. The *preposition* (предлогъ).
8. The *conjunction* (союзъ).
9. The *interjection* (междомѣтіе).

Certain languages, such as the French, German, English and others, make use of a distinctive word before a common noun, whenever employed in speech, unless the same be sufficiently determined by the accompanying word; thus the French say: *le chapeau, la plume*; the German: *der Hut, die Feder*; and the English: *the hat, the pen*. If the common noun, however, be taken in an indeterminate sense, it is then preceded by another word; as: *un chapeau, une plume*; *ein Hut, eine Feder*; *a hat, a pen*. This kind of word is called *article* (членъ), and distinguished in those tongues by the *definite* and *indefinite* article. In French the articles are: *le, la, les*, and *un, une, des*; in German: *der, die, das, die*, and *ein, eine*; in English: *the* and *a* or *an*. The Russian language has no articles, it being left to the sense of the sentence to indicate whether the common noun is taken in a determinate or indeterminate sense. This deficiency is sometimes also supplied by other words, such as *тотъ, this*, to indicate a determinate, and *нѣкоторый, certain*, to indicate an indeterminate sense; as: *Тотъ человекъ, о которомъ вы говорите, пришѣлъ ко мнѣ, the man of whom you speak, is come to me; нѣкоторый человекъ пришѣлъ ко мнѣ, a man is come to me.*

- 14.—All words, whether parts of speech or particles, are either *primitive* or *derivative*, *simple* or *compound*. The *primitives* (первообразныя) are such

Divisio
of word

as are not formed from other words; e. g. садъ, *garden*; жена, *woman*; бѣлый, *white*; жить, *to live*. The *derivatives* (производныя) are such as are formed from words already existing in the language, e. g. садовникъ, *gardener*; жѣнский, *womanly*; бѣлизна, *whiteness*; пережить, *to over-live*. *Compounds* (сложныя) are formed of two denominative words; e. g. садоводство, *horticulture*, from садъ, *garden* (lat. *hortus*), and водить, *cultivate*; трудолюбіе, *love of work*, from трудъ, *work*, and любить, *to love*. All other words, whether primitive or derivative, are *simple* (простыя).

Roots
of words.

15.—Every word, whether primitive or derivative, simple or compound, is formed from *roots* (корни), or from radical syllables and letters, which become words by the junction of other roots. Thus in the words: зрю, *I see*; зрѣніе, *the sight*; зримый, *visible*; зоркій, *sharp-sighted*; обозрѣть, *to examine*, the root is the syllable зор or the mixed consonant зр, which becomes significant by the addition of the syllables ю, ѣніе, имый, кій, обо, &c.—The roots may be divided into *principal* and *secondary*.

1) The *principal* roots (главные) are such as serve to form denominative words, or parts of speech; such are the roots вид, ок, рук, whence the words видѣ, *sight*; око, *eye*; рука, *hand*, are formed. 2) The *secondary* roots (придаточные) are those from which, in the first place, auxiliary words or particles are formed, e. g. изъ, *of*; въ, *in*; съ, *with*; and which afterwards serve to form words by being united with the principal roots; e. g. видный, *visible*; очки, *spectacles*; поручить, *to commit*. Thus the secondary roots

are: *a) initial* (предъидущіе), placed at the beginning of words, and called *prefixes* or *prepositions*, e. g. у-ходъ, *departüre*; от-казъ, *refusal*; and *b) final* (послѣдующіе), which form the terminations of words, and are called *suffixes*, e. g. вод-а, *water*; зем-ля, *earth*; крас-ный, *red*; дѣл-аѣ, *to do*.

In order to trace Russian words properly so called, that is to say Slavonian words, to their roots, the learner will do well to proceed in the following manner. Let us take as examples the words преизбыточествовать, *to superabound*, and засвидѣтельствова́ніе, *attestation*. After taking away the initial secondary roots *пре* and *за*, and the finals *ать* and *аніе*, there remain the words избыточество, *abundance*, and свидѣтельство, *testimony*, which are derived from избытокъ, *superfluity*, and свидѣтель (in Slavonian *свѣдѣтель*), *witness*. These last mentioned are themselves derived from избытъ, *to abound*, and свѣдѣть, *to know*; words which are formed of the prepositions *изъ* and *съ*, joined to the simple verbs *быть*, *to be*, and *вѣдѣть* or *вѣдать*, *to know*, from whence if we take away the terminations of the infinitive, there remain *бы* and *вѣд*. We thus see the root of the word преизбыточествовать is **БЫ**; the steps of its formation being apparent: *быть*, *избытъ*, *избытокъ*, *избыточество*, *избыточествовать*, *преизбыточествовать*; the word засвидѣтельствова́ніе has **ВѢД** for its root, whence are derived: *вѣдѣть* or *вѣдать*, *свѣдѣть*, *свѣдѣтель* (in Russian *свидѣтель*), *свидѣтельство*, *свидѣтельствова́ть*, *засвидѣтельствова́ть*, *засвидѣтельствова́ніе*.

Every Russian word of Slavonian origin may be submitted to the same process of dissection, and the learner will find the following words appropriate as an exercise: *независимость*, *independence*; *неизмѣримый*, *immensurable*; *предсѣдательствовать*, *to preside*; *состраданіе*, *compassion*; *изобрѣтательность*, *invention, inventive faculty*; *вспомогательный*, *auxiliary*; *честолюбіе*, *ambition*; *удовлетворительный*, *satisfactory*; *путешественникъ*, *traveller*; *законодательство*, *legislation*; *земледѣльческій*, *agricultural*; *паредворецъ*, *courtier*.

Inflections
of words.

- 16.—The parts of speech, or denominative words, are distinguished from the particles, or auxiliary words, by being subject to sundry *inflections* (измѣненія), which are usually of two kinds: *constant* (постоянныя) and *accidental* (случайныя).—1) The *constant* inflections are met with in the structure of derivative and compound words. This is what is called the *formation* (образованіе) of a word; e. g. царь, *king*; царица, *queen*; царскій, *royal*; царство, *kingdom*; царственный, *of the kingdom*; царствовать, *to reign*; царствованіе, *reigning*.—2) The *accidental* inflections are the different terminations and prepositions which a word takes, and which without changing its nature serve to express some circumstance connected with the idea designated by the word; e. g. рука, *the hand*; рукою, *with the hand*; руки, *the hands*; вижу, *I see*; видишь, *thou seest*; бѣлый, *white*; бѣлѣйшій, *whiter*; побѣлѣе, *a little whiter*, &c.

Metaplasms
of words.

- 17.—The different inflections of which words are susceptible, undergo, in order to facilitate the pronunciation, *metaplasms* (перемѣны), which at times change even the final letters of the radical word. These metaplasms or alterations consist in the *permutation* (замѣна) of one letter for another; in the *epenthesis* (вставка) and *prosthesis* (приставка) of some letters, and in the *apocope* (усѣченіе) and *syncope* (изъятіе) of others.

Permutation
of letters.

- 18.—The *permutation* of letters, in the Russian language, arises from the circumstance that some vowels cannot be placed in juxta-position with certain consonants; thus the hissing, guttural and lingual

consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ; г, к, х; ц) cannot be joined with some vowels; the vowels я, е, ю, and the semi-vowel ъ, never admit immediately before them either the guttural consonants (г, к, х), in any inflection, or sometimes the dental and lisping consonants (д, т; з, с); and further the vowel и, in the derivation of words, never admits before it either the gutturals or the lingual (г, к, х; ц), which are then changed for the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ), as is seen below.

PERMUTATION OF LETTERS.

1. The consonants г, д, з,	} before я, е, и, ю, ъ,	{ change into ж.
2. The consonants к, з, ц,		
3. The consonants х, с,		
4. The consonants ск, ст,		
5. The vowel я,	} after г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ; ц,	{ changes into а.
6. The vowel ю,		
7. The vowel и, after г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ,		changes into е.
8. The vowel о, after ж, ч, ш, щ; ц,		changes into е.
9. The vowel ъ, after the vowel і,		changes into е.
10. The semi-vowel ъ, after a vowel,		changes into й.
11. The semi-vowels ъ and й, before a consonant with ъ,		change into е.
12. The semi-vowel ъ, before two consonants,		changes into о.

Examples: 1) *служить*, to serve; *вижу*, I see; *рѣжь*, cut, from *слуга*, servant; *видѣть*, to see; *рѣзать*, to cut; 2) *мучить*, to torment; *свѣча*, candle; *отѣчество*, native land, from *мука*, torment; *свѣтъ*, light; *отѣцъ*, father; 3) *тише*, slower; *прошѣніе*, petition, from *тихъ*, slow; *просить*, to ask; 4) *ищу*, I seek; *чище*, purer, from *искать*, to seek; *чистъ*, pure; 5) *служá* (for *служоя*), serving; 6) *вожý*, (for *вожю*), I lead; 7) *руки*, the hands; *мужи*, the men (for *рукы*, *мужы*); 8) *пальцемъ* (for *пáльцомъ*), with the finger; 9) *въ Россіи* (for *въ Россію*), in Russia; 10) *недѣля*, week, has for its genitive plural *недѣль*; whilst *шея*, the neck, has *шей*; 11) *судьба*, destiny; *копѣйка*, *копѣекъ*, have in the genitive plural *судѣбъ*, *копѣекъ* (for *судѣбъ*, *копѣйкъ*); 12) *во мнѣ*, in me; *со всѣмъ*, with all (for *въ мнѣ*, *со всѣмъ*).

These permutations are subject to certain exceptions. The dental consonants (д, т) sometimes preserve the Slavonian per-

mutation жд and щ, въ гражданинѣ, *citizen*; пища, *aliment*, from градъ, city; питать, to nourish. When the accented vowel *e* is pronounced *o* (after ж, ч, ш, щ, ц), the vowel *o* may be used, as хорошо, *well*; плечо, *shoulder*; яйцо, *egg*. It still remains to be observed that in words where г, к, х, ц, are changed before н and ж, as ножка, *a little foot*; вѣчный, *eternal*; пастушка, *shepherdess*; личный, *personal* (from ногъ, foot; въкъ, an age; пастухъ, shepherd; лице, individual), the change is not required by the letters н and ж, but arises from the circumstance that formerly the semi-vowel *ь*, before which the consonants г, к, х, ц, change into ж, ч, ш, was employed before those consonants (ножька, въчный, &c.), but has been suppressed in modern orthography.

Epenthesis
and prosthesis.

19.—*Epenthesis*, or the insertion of a letter in the middle of a word, and *prosthesis*, or the addition of a letter at the beginning of a word, take place both to facilitate the pronunciation, and to unite letters which cannot be placed in juxta-position. The vowels *o* and *e* are inserted between two consonants at the end of words, and thus serve as a connecting link between the two roots of a compound word; e. g. огонь, *fire*; вѣтеръ, *wind* (instead of the Slavonian огнь, вътръ); законодатель, *legislator*; землеописание, *geography*. The consonant л is inserted also after the labials (б, в, м, п, ф), when they ought to be followed by ю or е; e. g. люблю, *I love*; дешевле, *cheaper* (from любить, to love; дешевле, cheap). The consonant н is also epenthetic in внушать, *to suggest*; поднимать, *to take up*; на него, *against him*. The consonant в is sometimes added at the beginning of a word, before the vowel *o*; e. g. восемь, *eight* (instead of the Slavonian осьмь); острые, *sharp*; отчина, *patrimony* (used familiarly for острый, отчина). The same is the

case with the vowel *o* in *оржаной*, of *руа* (for

20.—*Апосcope*, or the cutting of a letter at the end of a word, and *syncope*, or the elision of a letter in the middle of a word, are employed to facilitate or soften the pronunciation, *e. g. со мною, *with me*; чтобъ, *in order that*; двину́ть, *to move*; обеща́ть, *to promise*; блестя́ть, *to shine*; полтора́, *one and a half* (instead of со мно́ю, что́бы, дви́нуть, обеща́ть, блестя́ть, полтора́). Апосcope
and syncope

THE SUBSTANTIVE.

21.—The *substantives* (существительныя имена) Division of
substantives in the Russian language are of two kinds: common nouns or *appellatives* (нарица́тельные), as: челове́къ, *man*; го́родъ, *town*; рѣ́ка, *river*; and individual or *proper* nouns (со́бственныя), as: Влади́миръ, *Vladimir*; Москв́а, *Moscow*; Во́лга, *the Volga*.—Among the common nouns we distinguish a class called *collective* (собира́тельные), such are: наро́дъ, *people*; ста́до, *herd*; лѣ́съ, *forest*; also *material* nouns (веще́ственные), such are: му́ка, *flour*; ма́сло, *oil*; зо́лото, *gold*.—The proper names of men are of three kinds: *a*) *christian* names (крѣ́стныя имена), as: Алекса́ндръ, *Alexander*; Ле́въ, *Leon*; Ольга, *Olga*; Любо́вь, *Amy*; *b*) *patronymic* names (отче́ственные), as: Алекса́ндровичъ and Алекса́ндровна, *son and daughter of Alexander*; Льво́вичъ and Льво́вна, *son and daughter of Leon*; and *c*) *family* names (про́звищныя, фами́льныя), as: Держа́винъ, *Derzhavin*; Орло́въ, *Orlof*; Долгору́кий, *Dolgorooky*; Толсто́й, *Tolstoi*.

Properties
of nouns.

22.—The properties of substantives in the Russian language are, the *gender* (родъ), the *aspect* (видъ), the *number* (число) and the *case* (падѣжъ). The two former are *constant* inflections, belonging to the formation of nouns; the two latter are *accidental* inflections, employed in the declension.

Genders

23.—In the Russian language there are three genders: the *masculine* (мужескій), the *feminine* (женскій) and the *neuter* (средній). The genders of nouns are known, in the names of animate beings, by their *signification*, and in the names of inanimate and abstract objects, by their *termination*.

1. The *masculine* gender comprehends the names of animate beings of the male sex; e. g. отѣцъ, *the father*; герóй, *the hero*; царь, *the king*; юноша, *a young man*; дядя, *an uncle*; мѣняло, *a money-changer*; подмастерье, *a journeyman*; and also, such names of inanimate and abstract objects terminating in ѣ, й, and some which end in ъ, e. g. домъ, *the house*; покой, *repose*; корáбль, *a vessel*.

2. The *feminine* gender comprehends the names of animate beings of the female sex; e. g. сестра, *the sister*; няня, *a nurse*; дочь, *the daughter*; Елисаветъ, *Elizabeth*; Клио, *Clio*; also the names of inanimate and abstract objects terminating in а, я, and some which end in ъ; e. g. книга, *a book*, пуля, *a ball*; добродѣтель, *virtue*.

3. The *neuter* gender comprehends the names of animate beings where the distinction of sex is not evident, as: дитя and чадо, *a child*; чудовище, *a monster*; and also the names of animate and abstract

objects terminating in *o*, *e*, and *мя*, e. g. з^ол^от^о, *gold*; м^ор^е, *the sea*; в^ре^мя, *the time*.

As regards the rules relating to the genders, the following observations are of importance: *

1. The nouns which designate any particular species of animals, form an exception to the rule which declares the gender of nouns designating animate being to be determined by their signification. These nouns are, according to their termination, either masculine, as: ч^{ел}ов^ѣк^ъ, *a man*; нос^ор^ог^ъ, *a rhinoceros*; со^ко^лъ, *a falcon*; о^кун^ь, *a perch*; or feminine, as: обез^ья^{на}, *an ape*; со^ба^{ка}, *a dog*; ло^ша^{дь}, *a horse*; щ^ьу^{ка}, *a pike*.

2. To determine the gender of nouns terminating in *b*, the following rules may be given:

1) Besides such nouns as designate animate beings of the male sex, the following are *masculine*: a) The names of the months, as: я^нв^ар^ь, *January*; ю^ль, *July*; де^ка^бр^ь, *December*, &c. b) The names of active objects, or agents, although inanimate, terminating in *тель*, as: чис^ли^тель, *the numerator*; мно^жи^тель, *the multiplier*, &c. c) The common nouns designating animate beings, as: гу^сь, *a goose*; ло^сь, *an elk*; &c., with the exception of some names of animals which are feminine, such as: ло^ша^{дь}, *a horse*; се^ль^{дь}, *a herring*; во^шь, *a louse*; мы^шь, *a mouse*; фо^рель, *the trout*, and some others. d) The names of towns, lakes and places, whether Russian or foreign, as: Яро^сла^вль, *Yaroslav*; Се^васт^опо^ль, *Sebastopol*; Брю^сс^ель, *Bruxelles*, with the exception of Каза^нь, *Kazan*; Ас^тра^ха^нь, *Astrachan*; Тве^рь, *Tvaïr*; Вер^са^ль, *Versailles*; Бу^ло^нь, *Boulogne*; Мар^се^ль, *Marselles*; Испа^га^нь, *Ispahan*; Эри^ва^нь, *Erivan*.

2) The following are *feminine*: a) All the names of abstract objects, e. g. жи^знь, *life*; че^сть, *honour*, &c., with the exception of де^нь, *the day*; пе^рече^нь, *an extract*; во^пль, *cries*; ви^хрь, *a whirlwind*; and foreign words, such as: кон^тро^ль, *control*; па^ро^ль, *parole*; спек^та^кль, *spectacle*; сти^ль, *style*. b) The names of rivers and countries; e. g. Об^ь, *the Obi*; Си^би^рь, *Siberia*, &c., except Ана^ды^рь, *Anadir*. c) The common names of inanimate objects; e. g. бров^ь, *the eyebrow*; в^ѣтв^ь, *a branch*; це^рков^ь, *a church*, &c., except the following which are masculine:

алкоголь, alcohol.	костыль, a crutch-stick.	ревенъ, the rhubarb.
алтарь, an altar.	кочень, a head of cab-	ременъ, a strap.
бемоль, B-flat. [tunic.	кремёнь, a flint. [bage.	рубль, a rooble.
бешметъ, Tartar under	кремль, citadel, castle.	руль, the helm.
бизань, mizzen-sail.	крёндель, a cracknel.	сбитень, honey-tea.
биль, a billiard ball.	кубарь, a top.	сераль, a seraglio.
благирь, massicot. [sail.	кудерь, curly hair.	складень, a necklace.
бравсель, top-gallant	куколь, corn-cockle.	слизень, the slug.
бредень, a drag-net?	куль, a mat-sack.	словарь, a dictionary.
букварь, ABC-book.	лагерь, a camp.	срослень, double branche.
бюлетень, a bulletin.	лапотъ, a bast-shoe.	ставень, a window-
вексель, bill of exchange.	ларь, a large chest.	shutter.
вэнзель, a monogram.	лэжень, foundation beam.	стаксель, stay-sail.
волдырь, a tubercle.	локоть, the elbow.	стapelъ, stocks, launch.
гвоздь, a nail.	ломоть, a slice.	стебель, a stalk.
глаголь, a crane.	марсель, top-sail.	стержень, core (of a boil).
горбыль, a sleeve-board.	мергель, marl.	стихарь, the surplice.
госпиталь, a hospital.	миндаль, almonds.	сударь, a winding-sheet.
грёбень, a comb.	миткаль, calico.	сухарь, a rusk, biscuit.
грифель, a slate-pencil.	монастырь, a convent.	тополь, the poplar.
груздь, a fungus.	муфель, a muffle.	трэнзель, the curb.
дэготь, tar.	нашатирь, sal ammoniac.	трифель, a truffle.
денарь, denarius.	николь, nickel.	туфель, a slipper.
дождь, rain.	ноготъ, a finger-nail.	уголь, charcoal.
дьягиль, angelica.	нуль, a cipher, zero.	уровень, a level.
, an acorn.	огонь, fire.	внѣтъ, a match. [house).
, the jonquille.	орарь, the stole.	олягиль, a wing (of a
золотень, golden-rod.	панцырь, coat of mail.	фонарь, a lantern.
зубарь, a toothed plane.	пень, a stump.	фухтель, fiad side of a
иверень, a splinter.	перистиль, a peristyle.	хмѣль, the hop. [sword.
инбирь, ginger.	перкаль, shirting calico.	ходень, an object in mo-
кадриль, a quadrille.	перстень, a ring.	tion.
календарь, almanach.	пистоль, a pistole.	хрусталь, crystal.
камень, a stone.	пламень, flame.	циркуль, pair of compas-
картофель, potatoes.	пластырь, a plaster.	цоколь, the socle. [ses.
кашель, a cough.	плетень, wattled hedge.	чекмень, cosack upper-
кегель, a skittle.	портфель, a portfolio.	coat.
кёрвель, chervil.	поршень, a piston.	черноталь, bay-leaved
киль, the keel (of a ship).	пролежень, place chafed	willow.
кипень, hot-spring.	by lying.	чихирь, new wine.
, a sourish jelly.	противень, dripping-pan.	шѣлуль, the scab.
, bullet tied to a	профиль, a profile.	шѣель, a bushel.
, a claw. [string.	пузырь, a bladder.	шкворень, pole-bolt (of
козырь, a trump.	пупырь, a pimple.	a coach).
колодезь, a well.	пустырь, a vacant space.	шнелъ, a capstan.
кошметень, wild nard.	путь, the road.	штѣмпель, a stamp.
корабль, a ship.	пѣязь, money.	штиль, a calm.
корень, a root.	рашкуль, blue-black.	щавель, sorrel.
косарь, chopping knife.	рашпиль, a rasp.	щѣбень, rubbish.

ѡрѣ, the letter ѡ.
ѡѡѣ, the letter ѡѡ.

ѡкорѣ, an anker.
ѡтѡрѣ, sea-amber.

ѡсѡнѣ, the ash-tree.
ѡчмѡнѣ, barley.

3. Words taken from foreign languages and ending in *и, у, ю*, as; *колибри, a humming bird; какадѣ, the kakatoo; ревиѡ, the review*, are masculine, when they signify an animate being, and neuter when signifying an inanimate object. The other parts of speech, used as substantives, are neuter; e. g. *грѡмкое урѡ, a noisy hurrah; пѣрвое нѣтъ, the first no; нестерпимое ѡ, an insupportable I*.

4. Some nouns, terminating in *а* and *я*, and designating animate beings, with some quality attached, are of the *common* gender (*общій*), being both masculine and feminine. The following are examples:

бродѡга, a vagabond (*man or woman*).
брюзга, a grumbler.
ворожѣя, a fortune-teller.
выскачка, an upstart.
вѣтреница, a volatile person.
гуляка, a lazy person.
дога, a clever fellow.
забѡлка, a squabbler
заѡка, a stutterer.
зѡвака, a cockney.
кривошея, a wryneck.
лакомка, a dainty person.
лѡвшѡ, a left-handed person
мотѡга, a prodigal person.
невѣжда, an ignorant person

обжѡра, a glutton (*man or woman*).
плакса, a weeper.
порѡка, a surety.
пустѡчѣля, a chatterer.
пѡяница, a drunkard.
разѡня, a loiterer.
рѡвня, a person of the same age
рубѡка, a slasher.
самоѡчка, a self-taught person.
святѡша, a bigoted person.
сирѡта, an orphan.
тезка, a namesake.
убѡйца, a murderer or murderess.
ѡмница, a clever person.
ханжѡ, a hypocrite.

5. The genders of words signifying relationship, as also the names of animals, are distinguished in various ways. Sometimes by the employment of different words; e. g. *отѣцѣ, the father*, and *мѡтѣ, the mother*; *сынѣ, the son*, and *дѡчѣ, the daughter*; *братѣ, the brother*; and *сестрѡ, the sister*; *быкъ, the bull*, and *кѡрѡва, the cow*; *пѣтѣухѣ, the cock*, and *кѣрица, the hen*; *барѡнѣ, the ram*, and *ѡвцѡ, the sheep*, &c. Sometimes the same word and the same gender are applied to both sexes; e. g. *другѣ, a friend*; *врагѣ, an enemy*; *товѡрищѣ, a companion*; *дѡтѣ, a child (male and female)*; *ѡсѡба, a person*; occasionally the same word is used but with common gender, as has already been said. Usually however masculine nouns, if used to designate feminine objects, change their termination. In these, which are called *movable* nouns (*дѡвѣжимыѡ*), for the masculine ending

are substituted the feminine terminations: *a, я, ка, овка, ица, шца, ница, иня, ша*, and some others, the preceding consonant being at the same time often changed, as is seen in the following examples:

кумъ, godfather; кума, godmother.	шутъ; шутѡвка, a buffoon, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
павлинъ, peacock; павѡ, peahen.	левъ, a lion; лѡвица, a lioness.
господи́нъ, master; госпожа́, mistress.	императоръ, emperor; -патри́ца, empress.
тестъ, father-in-law; тѣща, mother-in-law.	жрецъ, priest; жри́ца, priestess.
дура́къ; ду́ра, a fool, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>	ка́рла; ка́рлица, a dwarf, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
коза́ль, a he-goat; коза́, a she-goat.	жи́тель; жи́тельница, inhabitant, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
гость; го́стья, a guest, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>	мона́хъ, a monk; мона́хня, a nun.
игу́менъ, an abbot; игу́менья, an abbess.	князь, prince; кня́гиня, princess.
лгу́нъ; лгу́нья, a liar, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>	геро́й, hero; геро́иня, heroine.
сосѣ́дъ; сосѣ́дка, a neighbour, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>	богъ, a god; богиня́, a goddess.
слуга́, man-servant; -жа́нка, maid-servant.	графъ, count; графиня́, countess.
пасту́хъ, shepherd; -у́шка, shepherdess.	опеку́нъ; опеку́нша, a guardian, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
крестья́нинъ; крестья́нка, peasant, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>	велика́нъ, giant; велика́нша, giantess.
само́ецъ, a male; самка́, a female.	король, king; королева́, queen.
хозя́инъ, host; хозяй́ка, hostess.	баро́нъ, baron; баронесса́, baroness.
жидъ, a Jew; жидѡвка, a Jewess.	госуда́рь; госуда́рыня, sovereign, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
чижъ, siskin; чиже́вка, hen-siskin.	стары́къ, an old man; стару́ха, an old woman.
ще́голь, a beau; ще́голи́ха, a belle.	швецъ, sempster; шве́я, sempstress.
поваръ, a cook; повари́ха, a cook-maid.	свѣкоръ, father-in-law; свекро́вь, mother-in-law.

It remains to be observed that in professional names the Russian language makes a distinction between the name of the wife of a professional man, and the name of a woman who, herself, exercises a profession; e. g. *инспектри́ца, inspectress*, and *инспекторша́, wife of an inspector*; *лека́рка, a woman who practices medicine*, and *лека́рша, wife of a doctor*; *дво́рница, a female door-keeper*, and *дво́рничиха́, wife of a door-keeper*; *учи́тельница, schoolmistress*; and *учи́тельша́, wife of a schoolmaster* (from *инспекто́ръ, лека́рь, дво́рникъ* and *учи́тель*).

Aspects. 24.—Objects may present themselves to us in different forms, as greater or less, prettier or uglier, than ordinary; and the Russian language has different inflections to express these *aspects*.

1. The *augmentative* nouns (увеличительныя), which terminate in the masculine in *ище, ина*; in the neuter in *ище*, and in the feminine in *ища*, represent the object in a magnified form, at the same time adding the idea of ugliness or deformity; e. g. *мужичище, a great clownish peasant*; *дурачина, a great blockhead*; *личище, great face*; *лапища, a great paw* (from *мужикъ, дуракъ, лице* and *лапа*).

2. The *diminutive* nouns (уменьшительныя), which present the object diminished in size, end, in the masculine in *икъ, окъ, екъ, ецъ, якъ*; in the neuter in *ко, це*, and in the feminine in *ка, ица*, e. g. *столикъ, little table*; *червякъ, little worm*; *заводець, little manufactory*; *деревоцъ, little tree*; *ручка, little hand*; *вещица, little thing* (from *столъ, червь, заводъ, дерево, рука* and *вещь*). From these diminutives others again are formed, as: *столичекъ, червячекъ, ручечка, вещичка*.

Besides these diminutives, which lessen the force of the primitives, and which may be termed *physical* diminutives, there are further: *a*) diminutives of tenderness, friendship, or in one word, of feeling, which terminate in *ушка, юшка, енька*, as: *ба́тюшка, dear father*; *ма́тушка, dear mother*; *ма́менька, dear mamma* (from *ба́тя, мать* and *ма́ма*); and *b*) diminutives of contempt or slight, presenting the object in an unfavourable point of view; these terminate in *ушко, ушка, енка*, e. g. *до́мишко, a miserable little house*; *лошаде́нка, a miserable little horse*.

Christian names admit also diminutives, both in a favourable and unfavourable sense; thus *Ива́нъ,*

John; Пётръ, *Peter*; Серѣй, *Sergius*, become as diminutives of feeling В́ня, Цѣтя, Серѣжа, and as diminutives of contempt В́нька, Пѣтька, Серѣжка. These diminutives, by which the primitive nouns are limited and changed, can only be learned by practice.

- The diminutives properly so called, which indicate the smallness of objects, are very commonly employed in Russian, while diminutives of feeling and contempt are seldom used except in familiar language. The same remark applies equally to the augmentatives.

Numbers. 25.—In Russian, as in English, there are two numbers; the *singular* (единственное число), as: столъ, *the table*; книга, *a book*; окно́, *the window*; and the *plural* (множественное), as: столы́, *the tables*; книги́, *books*; окна́, *the windows*.

The Slavonian, like the Greek, has a third number, the *dual* (дво́йственное), which has been retained in certain Russian inflections, as will subsequently be seen.

Some substantives are only used in the *singular*; such are most proper names, and the names of material and abstract objects; e. g. серебро́, *silver*; я́сность, *evidence*; любóвь, *love*. Others are only used in the *plural*; the following are of this class.

<i>Masculine gender.</i>	<i>Neuter gender.</i>	<i>Feminine gender.</i>
квасцы́, alum.	бѣлы́я, white lead.	бры́лья, the needle game.
люди́, people	воро́та, yard-gate.	имя́нины, a name-day.
обо́и, tapestry.	дрова́, fire-wood.	но́жницы, scissors.
опи́лки, saw-dust.	крѣ́сла, an arm-chair	око́вы, fetters, chains.
очки́, spectacles.	пері́ла, a balustrade.	отру́би, bran.
прого́ны, post-fare.	письме́на, letters.	ро́дны, delivery
пальцы́, a sewing-frame.	раме́на, shoulders.	ры́ль, a hurdy-gurdy.
судка́, a cruet stand.	уста́, mouth.	са́ни, sledge.
тиска́, a press.	черни́ла, ink.	сѹмерки́, dawn.
щипцы́, snuffers.	чресла́, the loins.	су́тки, day (24 hours).

Some names of towns are only used in the plural; such are: Бѣлы́, Вязники́, Крестцы́, of the *masculine gender*, and Бронны́, Холмо́ры, and the foreign names: Аѣны́, *Athens*; Я́ссы, *Iassy*; Ойвы́, *Thebes*, of the *feminine gender*.

26.—The *cases* are different inflections which nouns assume to indicate the mutual relation of objects. The English language has strictly speaking but one case, the genitive; the mutual relation of words being indicated either by a preposition or by the position of words in a phrase. In the Russian language there are seven cases, which may be known, in the names of animate beings, by putting the questions: *кто, когó, кому́, когó, къмá, о комá?* and in the names of inanimate objects by the questions: *что, чегó, чему́, что, чьмá, о чьмá?* These are:

1. The *nominative* (именительный падежъ), which gives the name of an object in a phrase in answer to the question *кто* or *что?* e. g.

Кто́ учится? Ученикъ.

Who studies? *The scholar.*

Что́ предъ нимъ лежитъ? Книга.

What is before him? *A book.*

2. The *genitive* (родительный), which indicates possession, and which answers to the question *когó* or *чегó?* and also *чей, чья, чьё?* In English this case is expressed by the preposition *of*, or by an apostrophic *s*; e. g.

Хозяинъ (чегó?) дома.

The master (*of what?*) *of the house.*

Домъ (чей?) сосѣда.

The house (*of whom?*) *of the neighbour.*

Слушайся (когó?) матери.

Obey (*whom?*) *thy mother.*

3. The *dative* (дательный), which designates the person or thing to which an object relates, and answers to the question *кому́* or *чему́?* In English the dative is usually indicated by the preposition *to*; e. g.

Кому́ слѣдуетъ сія награ́да? To whom does this recompense come? *To the scholar.*
Ученику́.

Чему́ ты обра́довался? *Кни́гу.* With what were you delighted?
With a book.

4. The *accusative* (ви́нительный), which commonly called in English grammars the *objective*, answers to the question *кого́* or *что́*? e. g.

Кого́ ты хва́лишь? *Ученика́.* Whom do you praise? *The scholar.*
Что́ ты купи́лъ? *Кни́гу.* What have you bought? *A book.*

5. The *vocative* (зва́тельный), which expresses the name of the person or object addressed; e. g.

Учени́къ, будь приле́женъ! *Scholar, be attentive!*
Бо́же, спаси́ Царя́! *God, save the Emperór!*

6. The *instrumental* (твори́тельный) or *causative*, which designates the means or cause, and answers to the question *къмъ́* or *чьмъ́*? In English the prepositions *with* and *by* are commonly used for this purpose; e. g.

Къмъ́ дово́льны? *Ученико́мъ.* With whom is one satisfied?
With the scholar.

Чьмъ́ онъ заба́вляе́тся? *Кни́гою.* With what does he amuses himself? *With a book.*

7. The *prepositional* (предло́жный) or *locative*, which answers to the questions *о́ комъ́* or *о́ чьмъ́*? *въ́ комъ́* or *въ́ чьмъ́*? &c. This case, which in ecclesiastical Slavonian is called *narrative* (сказа́тельный), is termed in Russian *prepositional*, because it is always accompanied by one of the prepositions *въ́*, *in*; *на́*, *on*; *о́* or *о́бъ́*, *of*; *по́*, *after*; *при́*, *near* to; e. g.

О́ комъ́ гово́рятъ? *О́бъ́ учени́къ.* Of whom do they speak? *Of the scholar.*

Въ́ чьмъ́ ты нахо́дишь удо́вольствие́? *Въ́ кни́гу.* In what do you find pleasure?
In a book.

Two of these seven casual inflections, the *nominative* and *vocative*, are called *direct cases* (прямые), because they simply give the name of the object; the remaining five are termed *oblique* (косвенные).

27.—The change of the inflections in nouns, showing the numbers and cases, is called *declension* (склонение), and substantives are divided, according to the manner in which they are declined, into *regular* and *irregular*. Declension of substantives.

28.—Regular substantives, according to their termination, have three declensions: the *first* for nouns with the *masculine termination*, (ъ, и, ь); the *second* for those with the *neuter termination* (о, е, мя), and the *third* for those with the *feminine termination* (а, я, ь). Each of these declensions has three inflections, one *hard*, and two *soft*, as exhibited in the table below. The two following observations relative to this subject are important. Regular substantives.

1. The *vocative* is always like the *nominative*, except in the words Богъ, *God*; Господь, *Lord*; Иисусъ, *Jesus*; Христосъ, *Christ*; Отецъ, *Father*, which, in an invocation of the Deity, preserve the Slavonian inflection; Боже, Господи, Иисусе, Христэ, Отче.

2.—The *accusative, singular* of masculine nouns in the two first declensions, and *plural* in all three, is like the *nominative* when the noun designates an inanimate or abstract object, and like the *genitive* in the names of animate beings.

Masculine nouns, ending in *атель* and *итель*, and designating inanimate agents, such as знаменатель, *the denominator*; делитель, *the divisor* (in arithmetic), are declined like the names of animate beings, and consequently their *accusative* is like the

genitive. The same is the case with the names of inanimate objects which have been borrowed from animate, as: *спутникъ*, a *satellite* (of a planet). The word *идолъ*, *idol*, has its accusative like the genitive, whilst in its synonymes *кумиръ* and *истуканъ*, the accusative is like the nominative. The word *лице*, signifying *the face* and *an individual*, is used in both its meanings like the name of an inanimate object, its accusative being always the same as the nominative.

The collective nouns are always declined like the names of inanimate objects, though signifying a collection of animate beings, such as *наро́дъ*, a *nation*; *во́йско*, an *army*; *ста́до*, a *herd*.

DECLENSIONS OF REGULAR SUBSTANTIVES.													
		FIRST.			SECOND.			THIRD.					
		MASC. TERMINATION.			NEUTER TERMINATION.			FEM. TERMINATION.					
		Hard inf.		Soft inf.	Hard inf.		Soft inf.	Hard inf.		Soft inf.			
NUMBERS:	CASES:	N.	ъ	й	ь	о	е	мя	а	я	ь		
		G.	а	я	я	а	я	ени	ы	и	и		
		D.	у	ю	ю	у	ю	ени	ѣ	ѣ (и)	и		
		A.	. . like the <i>Nominative</i> or the <i>Genitive</i>								у	ю	ь
		V. like the <i>Nominative</i>										
		I.	омъ	емъ	емъ	омъ	емъ	енемъ	ою (оѣ)	ею (еѣ)	ію (ію)		
P.	ѣ	ѣ (и)	ѣ	ѣ	ѣ (и)	ени	ѣ	ѣ (и)	и				
PLURAL	N.	ы	и	и	а	я	мена	ы	и	и			
	G.	овъ (еѣ)	евъ	еѣ	ѣ	еѣ (ѣ, іѣ)	енъ	ѣ (еѣ)	ѣ (ѣ, іѣ)	еѣ			
	D.	амъ	ямъ	ямъ	амъ	ямъ	енамъ	амъ	ямъ	ямъ			
	A.	. . . . . like the <i>Nominative</i> or the <i>Genitive</i>										
	V.	. . . . . like the <i>Nominative</i>										
	I.	амн	ямн	ямн	амн	ямн	енамн	амн	ямн	ямн			
	P.	ахъ	яхъ	яхъ	ахъ	яхъ	енахъ	ахъ	яхъ	яхъ			

ules of the
elensions.

29.—In declining the regular nouns, certain rules are to be observed, some of which are *general*, being common to all the three declensions, while others are *special*, being confined to one of the declensions or one of the inflections.

1. According to what has already been observed (§ 18) relative to the permutation of letters, *a*) the vowel *u*, of the *genitive singular* and *nominative plural*, is changed for *u* after the guttural and hissing consonants (г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ); *b*) the vowel *o*, when without accent, of the *instrumental singular* and *genitive plural*, is changed for *e* after the lingual and hissing consonants (ц; ж, ч, ш, щ), observing however that after the lingual (ц) the vowel *o* may be used if it is accented; *c*) the vowel *o* of the *dative* and *prepositional singular* is changed for *u* after the vowel *i* (in nouns in *iŭ*, *ie* and *iŭ*). (See the paradigms 2, 3, 8, 16, 20, 21, 26).

2. A great number of nouns elide in the *other cases* (excepting in the *instrumental singular* of feminine nouns in *b*) the vowel *e* or *o*, inserted in the termination of the *nominative singular*; but we must observe that in this elision the vowel *e* is changed for *o* after the consonant *л*, and for *ŭ* after a vowel. (See paradigms 2, 4, 10, 28).

3. In such nouns of the II and III declension as have two consonants before the final vowel, the vowel *o* or *e* is usually inserted between the two consonants in the *genitive plural*; in such cases however the *e* is always substituted for the semi-vowels *o* and *ŭ*. (See paradigms 12, 13, 20, 23).

4. The *genitive plural* has some particular inflections: the inflection *ей* (instead of *овъ* and *ъ*) is peculiar to nouns in *ювъ*, *ѣвъ*, *шъ*, *щъ*, *ца*, to those in *юца*, *ѣа*, *ша*, preceded by another consonant, and to those in *овъ* and in *ѣа*; the inflection *ѣ* to nouns in *е* and *ѣ* preceded by a vowel, and the inflection *иѣ* to nouns in *овъ* and *ѣа*, contracted from *иѣ* and *иѣ*. (See paradigms 3, 16, 21, 24, 25, 26).

5. Such nouns as are only used in the *plural*, are declined according to the paradigm to which, by their termination, they belong. Thus among the *masculine* nouns, *хорóмы*, *edifice*, is declined according to the 1st paradigm (закóны); *щипцы*, *snuffers*, according to the 2d (отцы); *обóи*, *tapestry*, according to the 6th (герóи); *люди*, *men* (*instr.* *людѣмъ*), according to the 9th (короли); among the *neuter* nouns, *дрóва*, *firewood*, according to the 11th (слóва); *крéсла*, *arm-chair* (*gen.* *крéселъ*), according to the 12th (стéкла); *письмéна*, *letters*, according to the 18th (времéна); among the *feminine* nouns, *окóвы*, *chains*, according

to the 19th (коробы); носѣлки, *a hand-barrow* (gen. носѣлокъ), according to the 20th (пѣлки); сѣни, *a sledge*, and рыльѣ, *a hardy-gurdy*, according to the 27th (страсть).

6. *Foreign nouns*, whether common or proper, ending in *з, ѣ, б; а, я, в*, are declined like Russian nouns with the same terminations, whilst those in *е, и, о, у* and *ю*, are indeclinable. The same is the case with family names of females, whatever may be their termination. Thus ѳмнибусъ, *an omnibus*; Лондонъ, *London*, are declined according to the 1st paradigm (законъ); конвоѣ, *a convoy*; Барклэй, *Barclay*, according to the 6th (герой); вѳдевилъ, *a vaudeville*; Брюссель, *Bruxelles*, according to the 19th (король); пѣса, *a piece*, (of music, &c.); Петрърка, *Petrarch*, according to the 19th (корова); колонѣя, *a colony*, according to the 26th (молнѣя); гаванъ *f. a haven*, according to the 27th (страсть). But кофе, *coffee*; колибри, *a humming-bird*; депѳ, *depot* (military); рѣндеву, *a rendez-vous*; ревю, *a review*; Кѣстельре, *Castlereagh*; Морѳ, *Moreau*, are indeclinable. The same is the case with the feminine family names; as Жанлѣсъ, Сталь, &c.; thus we say: у Госпожи Жанлѣсъ, *at the house of Mrs Genlis*; сочинѣнѣ Госпожи Сталь, *the work of Mrs Staal*.

Special
rules.

1. Nouns ending in *ѣнокъ*, signifying the young ones of animals, are masculine in the singular; but in the plural they preserve the Slavonian inflection *ята* or *ата*, and are neuter. (See paradigm 4).

2. Nouns ending in *ѣминъ* or *ѣнинъ* and in *ѣринъ* or *ѣринъ*, have peculiar inflections in the plural. (See paradigm 5).

3. In the *instrumental singular* of the III declension, *оу* is contracted in *оѣ*, *еу* in *еѣ*, and *ѣу* in *ѣѣ*; thus we say: рукѳу or рукѳѣ, *with the hand*; землѳу or землѳѣ, *by the earth*. (See paradigm 28). In the same manner the *instrumental plural* *ѣми* of some nouns in *ѣ* is contracted in *ѣми*, the accent being in such cases placed on the last syllable; thus we say: людѳми, *with men*; дверѳми, *by gates*; лошадѳми, *with horses* (and not людѣми, дверѣми, лошадѣми).

4. The *genitive singular* of masculine nouns in *з, ѣ, ѣ*, signifying divisible matter, often takes, especially in familiar language, the inflection *у* and *ю* of the dative (instead of *а* and *я*); thus we say: ѳунтъ сѣхару, *a pound of sugar*; лѳжка дѣтѳю, *a spoonful of tar*; чѣшка чѣю, *a cup of tea*. The same

inflection (instead of *н*) is also found in the *prepositional, singular*, accompanied with the preposition *въ* or *на*, in some nouns in *ъ* and *ѣ*, and in such cases takes the tonic accent; thus we say: *въ саду́*, in the garden; *на краю́*, on the brink.

§. In *compound substantives*, the first word is also declined, if in its junction with the second it has preserved the termination of its nominative singular; thus *Ца́рьградъ*, *Constantinople*, is declined according to the 9th and the 1st paradigm: *G. Ца́ряграда, D. Ца́рюграду, I. Ца́ремъградо́мъ, P. о Ца́рьградѣ*. With respect to the names of towns compounded of the adjectives *новъ* and *бѣлъ*, as *Нѡвгородъ*, *Бѣло́озеро*, and to the common nouns formed of the numeral *полъ*, the *half*: as: *по́лдень*, *midday*; *по́лгода*, *half a year*, we refer the student to our remarks on that subject in the declension of the adjectives and numerals.

30.—By observing the above general and special Paradigms of the declensions of substantives. rules we shall be able to decline all the regular nouns of the Russian language according to the following 28 paradigms.

According to the 1st paradigm (зако́нъ) are declined nouns First declension. in *ъ* (with the exception of those which belong to the 4 following paradigms), remembering however to change *ъ* into *и* after the gutturals (*г, к, х*), and *о* into *е* after the lingual (*ц*), and observing further, that several nouns of the 1st declension throw the accent on the inflections of the cases, some commencing with the genitive singular, others with the nominative plural, and others again with the genitive plural. Such are:

Ба́рака, the ram. <i>G. ба́рана.</i>	Да́ръ, the gift. <i>G. да́ра; N. пл. да́ры.</i>
Ве́ртепъ, the cavern, верте́па.	До́лгъ, the debt, до́лга; до́лгѣ.
Ку́миръ, an idol, ку́мира.	Чи́ня, a rank, чи́на; чи́ны.
Во́лхвъ, the magician, во́лхвъ.	Ша́ръ, a ball, ша́ра; ша́ры.
Вра́гъ, the enemy, вра́га.	Бо́гъ, a god; <i>N. пл. бо́ги, G. богѡвъ.</i>
Язы́къ, the tongue, язы́ка.	Воръ, a robber; во́ры, ворѡвъ.
Пѣ́тухъ, a cock, пѣ́туха.	Гро́бъ, a coffin; гро́бы, гро́бовъ.
Мѣ́сяцъ, a month, мѣ́сяца.	Ду́бъ, an oak; ду́бы, ду́бовъ.
Ку́знецъ, the blacksmith, ку́знеца.	Во́лкъ, the wolf; во́лки, во́лковъ.

According to the 2d paradigm (оте́цъ) are declined the nouns in which the vowel *е* or *о* of the nominative is elided in the other cases, observing at the same time the change of *е* into *ь* after the consonant *л*, and into *ѣ* after a vowel. Such are:

PARADIGMS OF THE THREE DECLEN				
S I N G U				
DECLENSIONS.	TERMINATIONS:	PARADIGMS:	Nominat. and Vocat.	Genitive. Dat. Accus.
FIRST.	ъ	1.	закѡнъ, the law . . .	закѡн-а . . . у . . .
		2.	отецъ, the father . . .	отц-а . . . ѣ . . .
		3.	шалашъ, a cabin . . .	шалаш-а . . . ѣ . . .
		4.	телѣнокъ, a calf . . .	телѣнк-а . . . у . . .
		5.	дворянинъ, a gentleman	дворян-ин а . . . у . . .
	и	6.	геройъ, the hero . . .	геро-я . . . ю . . .
		7.	соловейъ, a nightingale	солов-ья . . . ѣю . . .
		8.	гѣнійъ, a genius . . .	гѣні-я . . . ю . . .
	ь	9.	король, the king . . .	коро-л-я . . . ю . . .
		10.	огонь, the fire . . .	огн-я . . . ю . . .
SECOND.	о	11.	слово, a word . . .	слов-а . . . у . . .
		12.	стекло, the glass . . .	стекл-а . . . ѣ . . .
		13.	колѣчко, small ring . . .	колѣчк-а . . . у . . .
		14.	море, the sea . . .	мор-я . . . ю . . .
	е	15.	ружьѣ, a gun . . .	руж-ья . . . ѣю . . .
		16.	мнѣніе, an opinion . . .	мнѣні-я . . . ю . . .
		17.	дѣтище, a great child	дѣтщ-а . . . у . . .
	и	18.	время, the time . . .	врѣм-ени . . . ени . . .
THIRD.	а	19.	корова, a cow . . .	коров-ы . . . ѣ . . . у . . .
		20.	палка, a stick . . .	палк-и . . . ѣ . . . у . . .
		21.	возжа, a bridle . . .	возж-и . . . ѣ . . . ѣ . . .
		22.	недѣля, the week . . .	недѣл-и . . . ѣ . . . ю . . .
		23.	пѣсня, a song . . .	пѣсн-и . . . ѣ . . . ю . . .
	и	24.	свая, a pile . . .	сва-и . . . ѣ . . . ю . . .
		25.	судья, the judge . . .	суд-ья . . . ѣ . . . ѣю . . .
		26.	молніа, a lightning . . .	молні-и . . . и . . . ю . . .
	ь	27.	страсть, a passion . . .	страст-и . . . и . . . ѣ . . .
		28.	ложь, the lie . . .	лж-и . . . и . . . лжѣ . . .

With respect to the use of the *tonic accent* in the declensions, the following rules are to be observed.

1. Nouns of the 1st declension commonly preserve through all the cases both of the singular and plural, the accent of the nominative singular. But most polysyllabic nouns, the termination of which is accented, transfer the accent to the inflection of the genitive, and keep it on this syllable through all the other cases. Several monosyllables follow the same rule. Other monosyllables preserve the nominative accent in the singular, but in the plural they transfer it to the inflections of the cases, some in all the cases, others from the genitive downwards.
2. In the 2d declension, the accent serves to distinguish the nominative plural from the genitive singular. On this account, those nouns which in

SIONS OF REGULAR SUBSTANTIVES.

L A R.			P L U R A L.		
<i>Instrum. Prep.</i>			<i>Nom. and Voc. Genitive. Dative. Accus. Instrum. Prepos.</i>		
омѣ . . ѣ . .	закон-ы	овѣ . . амѣ . .	амн . . ахѣ .		
ѣмѣ . . ѣ . .	отц-и	ѣвъ . . амѣ . .	амн . . ахѣ .		
ѣмѣ . . ѣ . .	шалаш-и	ѣи . . амѣ . .	амн . . ахѣ .		
ѣмѣ . . ѣ . .	телят-а	ѣ . . амѣ . .	амн . . ахѣ .		
омѣ . . ѣ . .	дворян-е	ѣ . . амѣ . .	амн . . ахѣ .		
емѣ . . ѣ . .	геро-и	евѣ . . ямѣ . .	ячн . . ахѣ .		
ѣемѣ . . ѣ ѣ . .	слов-и	евѣ . . ѣамѣ . .	ѣамн . . ѣахѣ .		
емѣ . . н . .	гѣни-и	евѣ . . ямѣ . .	ячн . . ахѣ .		
ѣчѣ . . ѣ . .	коро-и	ѣи . . ѣчѣ . .	ѣамн . . ѣахѣ .		
ѣчѣ . . ѣ . .	огн-и	ѣи . . ѣмѣ . .	ѣамн . . ѣахѣ .		
омѣ . . ѣ . .	слов-а	ѣ . . амѣ . .	амн . . ахѣ .		
омѣ . . ѣ . .	стѣкл-а	стѣкол-ѣ . . амѣ . .	амн . . ахѣ .		
омѣ . . ѣ . .	колѣс-к-и	колѣсеч-ѣ . . амѣ . .	амн . . ахѣ .		
емѣ . . ѣ . .	мор-я	ѣи . . ѣамѣ . .	ѣамн . . ѣахѣ .		
ѣемѣ . . ѣ ѣ . .	руж-ья	ѣи . . ѣамѣ . .	ѣамн . . ѣахѣ .		
емѣ . . н . .	мнѣи-я	и . . ямѣ . .	ячн . . ахѣ .		
емѣ . . ѣ . .	дѣти-и	ѣ . . амѣ . .	амн . . ахѣ .		
енемѣ . . ени	врем-ен-а	ѣнѣ . . енаѣчѣ .	енамн . . енахѣ .		
ою . . ѣ . .	коро-и	ѣ . . амѣ . .	амн . . ахѣ .		
ою . . ѣ . .	палк-и	палок-ѣ . . амѣ . .	амн . . ахѣ .		
ѣю . . ѣ . .	возж-и	ѣи . . амѣ . .	амн . . ахѣ .		
ею . . ѣ . .	недѣл-и	ѣ . . ямѣ . .	ячн . . ахѣ .		
ею . . ѣ . .	пѣсн-и	пѣсен-ѣ . . ямѣ . .	ячн . . ахѣ .		
ею . . ѣ . .	сва-и	ѣ . . ямѣ . .	ячн . . ахѣ .		
ѣю . . ѣ ѣ . .	суд-и	ѣи . . ѣамѣ . .	ѣамн . . ѣахѣ .		
ею . . н . .	молн-и	и . . ямѣ . .	ячн . . ахѣ .		
ію . . н . .	страст-и	ѣи . . ѣчѣ . .	ѣамн . . ѣахѣ .		
ложю . . лжи	лж-и	ѣи . . амѣ . .	амн . . ахѣ .		

{the Nominative, in the names of inanimate beings.
the Genitive, in the names of animate beings.

like

singular have the accent on the first syllable, transfer it in the plural to the last; while, on the contrary, those which in the singular have the accent on the last syllable, transfer it in the plural to the first, and keep it on that syllable through all the cases, both of the singular and plural.

3. In the III^d declension a distinction between the genitive singular and nominative plural only takes place in such nouns in *a* and *я*, as have the accent on the termination. These nouns transfer the accent to the first syllable in the nominative plural, resuming in all the other cases the accent of the singular. Some of these nouns have also in the accusative singular the accent on the first syllable. Among the nouns in *я*, there are several which transfer the accent to the inflections on the cases, from the genitive plural downwards.—The examples to these different rules here follow.

Орёлъ, an eagle, *G.* орла.
 Ковёръ, a carpet, ковра.
 Крючѣкъ, a hook, крючкѣ.
 Левъ, a lion, льва.
 Кулёкъ, a sack, кулкѣ.
 Илемъ, the elm-tree, ильмѣ.
 Конѣкъ, a skate, конькѣ.
 Боецъ, a wrestler, бойца.
 Заяцъ (and зайцъ), a hare, зайца.
 Опоёкъ, a calf's skin, опойка.

Багоръ, a hook, *G.* багра.
 Посолъ, an ambassador, посла.
 Лобъ, the forehead, лба.
 Псаломъ, a psalm, псалмѣ.
 Ротъ, the mouth, рта.
 Учѣстокъ, a portion, участка.
 Сонъ, sleep, сна.
 Уголъ, an angle, угла.
 Замокъ, a castle, замка.
 Замокъ, a lock, замкѣ.

According to the 3d paradigm (шалашиъ) are declined such nouns in *ъ* with a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), as form the *genitive plural* in *ей*; such are:

Падёжъ, the case, *G.* падежѣ.
 Платёжъ, the payment, платежѣ.
 Моржъ, a walrus, моржѣ.
 Ежъ, a hedgehog, ежѣ.
 Ключъ, the key, ключѣ.
 Лучъ, a ray, лучѣ.
 Кирпичъ, a brick, кирпичѣ.
 Мечъ, a sword, мечѣ.

Палашъ, the sabre, *G.* палашѣ.
 Ландышъ, the mayflower, ландышѣ.
 Карандашъ, a pencil, карандашѣ.
 Торгашъ, the mercer, торгашѣ.
 Плащъ, a mantle, плащѣ.
 Лещъ, the bream, лещѣ.
 Товарищъ, a comrade, товарищѣ.
 Овощъ, a fruit, овощѣ.

According to the 4th paradigm (телёнокъ) are declined the names of the young of animals, ending in *ёнокъ*, which, having retained in the plural the Slavonian inflection *ята* (or *ата* after *ю* and *у*), are neuter and consequently belong, in the singular to the 1st declension, and in the plural to the 2d. Some of these nouns however form their plural regularly in *енки*. Such are:

Ягнёнокъ, a lamb; *N. pl.* ягнѣта.
 Жеребёнокъ, a foal, жеребѣта.
 Цыплёнокъ, a pullet, цыплѣта.

Ослёнокъ, a young ass; *N. pl.* ослѣта.
 Волченокъ, a wolf's cub; волчѣта.
 Медвѣжёнокъ, a bear's cub; медвѣжѣта.

Поросёнокъ, a little pig; поросѣта.

Львёнокъ, a lion's whelp; *N. pl.* львѣнки.

Котёнокъ, a kitten; котѣта.

Галченокъ, a young awl; галчѣнки.

Ребёнокъ, a child; ребѣта

Мышёнокъ, a young mouse; мышѣнки.

Also щенёкъ, a pup, *G.* щенкѣ, *N. pl.* щенѣта and щенки.

According to the 5th paradigm (дворянинъ) are declined nouns in *инъ*, *анинъ*, *яринъ* and *аринъ*, which in the *plural* change *инъ* into *е*, *ъ*, *амъ*, &c.; such are:

Селянинъ, a villager; *N. pl.* селяне. Мирянинъ, a layman, *N. pl.* миряне.
 Крестянинъ, a peasant; крестяне. Поселянинъ, a husbandman; поселяне.

Семьянинъ, the head of a family; <i>N. pl</i> семьяне.	Огнѣщанинъ, a freeman; <i>N. pl</i> огнѣщане.
Россіянинъ, a Russian; Россіяне.	Христiанинъ, a Christian; христiане.
Гражданинъ, a citizen; гражда́не.	Боѣринъ, a lord; боѣре.
Мѣщанинъ, a burgher; мѣщане.	Болгаринъ, a Bulgarian; Болга́ре.

According to the 6th paradigm (ге́рбѣй) are declined the nouns in *ѣй*, with the exception of those in *ѣй* and of some in *ей*, which belong to the two following paradigms.* Such are:

Покѣй, a room, <i>G.</i> покѣя	Лышѣй, a scab, <i>G.</i> лышѣя.
Злодѣй, a wretch, злодѣя.	Пѣй, a part, пѣя.
Казначѣй, a treasurer, казначѣя.	Бѣй, the combat, <i>G.</i> бѣя; <i>N. pl.</i> бѣи.
Сарѣй, a coach-house, сарѣя.	Рѣй, a swarm, рѣя; роѣ.
Слѣчай, the occasion, слѣчая.	Стрѣй, the rank, стрѣя; строѣ.
Налѣй, a desk, налѣя.	Чѣй, the tea, чѣя; чай.

According to the 7th paradigm (соловѣй) are declined eight nouns in *ей*, as change the *e* of the nominative into *ѣ* in all the other cases. Some Christian names in *ѣй*, in familiar language, are declined in the same manner. Such are:

Воробѣй, a sparrow, <i>G.</i> воробѣя	Чѣрей, a furuncle, <i>G.</i> чѣрѣя.
Муравѣй, an ant, муравѣя.	Васѣлѣй, Basil, Васѣлля.
Ручѣй, a brook, ручѣя.	Григорѣй, Gregory, Григорѣя.
Репѣй, a little ribbon, репѣя	Левѣнтѣй, Leontius, Левѣнтѣя.
Улѣй, a bee-hive, улѣя.	Прокѣѣй, Procopius, Прокѣѣя.
Жеребѣй, the lot, жеребѣя.	Игнатѣй, Ignatius, Игнатѣя.

According to the 8th paradigm (ге́нѣй) are declined such nouns in *ѣй*, as take the inflection *и* (instead of *ѣ*) in the *prepositional singular*; such are:

Вика́рѣй, a vicar, <i>G.</i> вика́рѣя.	Виночѣрпѣй, a cup-bearer, <i>G.</i> виночѣрпѣя.
Инвѣнта́рѣй, an inventory, инвѣнта́рѣя.	
Коммѣнта́рѣй, a commentary, -мен- та́рѣя.	Мерку́рѣй, Mercury, Мерку́рѣя.
	Се́рпѣй, Sergius, Се́рпѣя.

Some substantives in *ѣй*, as портно́й, a tailor; ко́рмчѣй, the pilot, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like the adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 9th paradigm (коро́ль) are declined the masculine nouns in *ѣ*, with the exception of those which belong to the following paradigm. Such are:

Жѣлу́дь, an acorn, <i>G.</i> жѣлу́дя.	Госуда́рь, a sovereign, <i>G.</i> госуда́ря.
Колоде́зь, a well, колоде́зя.	Оле́нь, a stag, оле́ня.
Учи́тель, the teacher, учи́теля.	Медвѣ́дь, a bear, медвѣ́дя.
Собо́ль, a sable, собо́ля.	Ца́рь, a king, ца́ря.
Слѣса́рь, a lock-smith, слѣса́ря.	Кора́бль, a vessel, кора́бля.

Фонарь, a lantern, *G.* фонарь.

Фитиль, a match, фитиль.

Гусь, a goose; *N. pl.* гусь, *G.* гусей.

Голубь, a pigeon; голуби, голубей.

Зверь, a beast; звери, зверей.

Червь, a worm; черви, червей.

According to the 10th paradigm (огóнь) are declined such masculine nouns in *o*, as elide the vowel *o* or *o* in all the other cases; such are:

Камень, a stone, *G.* камня.

Стебель, a stem, стебля.

Лапоть, a bast shoe, лаптя.

Ремёнь, a thong, ремня.

Кремель, a flint, кремня.

Ломоть, a slice, ломтя.

Корень, the root, *N. pl.* корни, *G.* корней.

Угорь, an eel, угря, угрей.

Ноготь, a nail; ногти, ногтей.

Коготь, a claw; когти, когтей.

Перстень, a ring; перстни, перстней.

Локоть, the elbow; локти, локтей.

In the list of masculine nouns in *o*, given in § 23, which elide the vowel *e* or *o* of the nominative, this vowel is printed in *italics*.

Second
declension.

According to the 11th paradigm (слово) are declined the nouns in *o*, and those in *це*, *же*, *че* and *ше* (with the exception of such as belong to the following paradigm, of the diminutives in *ко* and *це* and augmentatives in *ше*), observing however the change of *o* into *e* after the hissing consonants and the lingual (ж, ч, ш, ц), and remarking that several nouns of the 11th declension transfer in the plural the accent from the first syllable to the last, and *vice versa*. Such are:

Тѣло, the body, *G.* тѣла; *N. pl.* тѣла.

Стадо, a herd, стада; стада,

Зеркало, a mirror, зеркала; зеркала

Озеро, a lake, озера; озёра.

Вино, the wine, вина; вина.

Село, a village, села; сѣла.

Колесо, a wheel, колеса; колёса.

Долото, a chisel, долота; долота.

Чáдо, *n.* a child, *G.* and *N. pl.* чáда.

Свѣтíло, a star, свѣтила.

Мѣнѣло, *m.* a changer, мѣняла.

Лицѣ, the face, *G.* лица; *N. pl.* лица.

Яйцѣ, an egg, яйца; яйца (*G.* яицъ).

Плечѣ, the shoulder, плеча; плеча.

Лóже, the couch, *G.* and *N. pl.* лóжа.

Вѣче, an assembly, вѣча.

Жилѣще, a dwelling, жилища.

Зрѣлище, a spectacle, зрѣлища.

Сокровище, a treasure, сокровища.

Гульбище, a promenade, гульбища.

Училище, a school, училища.

Кладбище, a cemetery, кладбища.

According to the 12th paradigm (стекло́) are declined those nouns in *o* and *e*, preceded by two consonants, which usually insert the vowel *e* or *o* in the *genitive plural*, observing at the same time that the nouns in *це* take the vowel *e*, and that the semi-vowel *o* between the two consonants is changed into *e*. Such are:

Рѣбро, a rib; *N. pl.* рѣбра, *G.* рѣберъ.

Пятно, a spot; пятна, пятенъ.

Зерно, a grain; зѣрна, зѣренъ.

Щемло, a vice, *N. pl.* щемла, *G.* щемель.

Сукно, cloth; сукна, суконъ.

Окно, the window; окна, оконъ.

Брёвна, a beam; *N. pl.* брёвна, *G.* Число, a number; *N. pl.* числа, *G.* брёвенъ. чиселъ (and числѣ).

Письмо, a letter; письма, писемъ. Сердце, the heart; сердца, сердецъ.

Полотно, linen; полотна, полотёнъ. Кольцо, a ring; кольца, колецъ.

Сѣдло, a saddle; сѣдла, сѣделъ. Крыльцо, a step; крыльца, крылецъ.

It is necessary to observe that in nouns in *здо*, *сто*, *ско* and *ство*, the genitive plural is formed without the insertion of any letter; e. g. ГНѢЗДО, a nest; МѢСТО, a place; ВОЙСКО, an army; ЧУВСТВО, the feeling,—*gen. plur.* ГНѢЗДЪ, МѢСТЪ, ВОЙСКЪ, ЧУВСТВЪ.

According to the 13th paradigm (КОЛѢЧКО) are declined the diminutives in *ко* and *це*, which form their *nominative plural* in *и* (for those in *ко*) or in *ы* (for those in *це*), inserting the vowel *e* in the genitive plural. Such are:

Сердечко, little heart; *pl.* сердечки, Донце, little bottom; *pl.* донцы, -дечекъ. [-течекъ. донецъ.

Мѣстечко, little place; мѣстечки, Дѣльце, mouth piece; дѣльцы,

Крылышко, little wing; крылышки, дѣлецъ.

-лышекъ.

Рыльце, little snout; рыльцы, рылецъ.

Домишко, little house; домишки, Полотёнце, a towel; полотёнцы,

-мишекъ.

-тёнецъ.

According to the 14th paradigm (МОРЕ) are declined those nouns in *ле* and *ре*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ей*; e. g.

Поле, the field; *G.* поля, *N. pl.* поля, *G.* полей.

Горе, a grief; горя (not used in the *plural*).

According to the 15th paradigm (РУЖЬЁ) are declined those nouns in *ве* and in *ее*, which change in the *genitive plural*, *ве* and *ее* into *ей*, and *ве*, a contraction of *ие*, into *ий*. Such are:

Жильё, a floor; *pl.* жилья, *G.* жилей. Платьё, a coat, *G. pl.* платьей.

Коньё, a lance; конья, коцей. Верховье, a spring, верховей.

Питьё, a beverage; питья, питей. Весельё, an enjoyment, веселій.

Лезвё, the edge; лезвья, лезвей. Воскресенье, Sunday, воскресеній.

Острё, the point, edge; острья, острей. Повѣрье, a belief, повѣрій.

The following nouns in *ве* form their *genitive plural* in *веев*: подмастерье *m.*, the journeyman; кѹшанье, a dish; помѣстье, a domain; ѹстье, mouth (of a river); варенье, a preserve.

According to the 16th paradigm (МНѢНІЕ) are declined nouns in *іе*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ій*, and which in the *prepositional singular* take the inflection *и* (instead of *ю*). In

these nouns the accent of the nominative plural is the same as that of the genitive singular. Such are:

Здѣніе, an edifice, <i>G. and N. pl. зданія.</i>	Оружіе, an arm, <i>G. and N. pl. оружія.</i>
Знаніе, knowledge, <i>знанія.</i>	Явленіе, an apparition, <i>явленія. [нія.]</i>
Желаніе, the desire, <i>желанія.</i>	Сообщеніе, a communication, <i>сообщенія.</i>
Понятіе, an idea, <i>понятія.</i>	Сомнѣніе, the doubt, <i>сомнѣнія.</i>
Собраніе, an assembly, <i>собранія.</i>	Владѣніе, the possession, <i>владѣнія.</i>
Растеніе, a plant, <i>растенія.</i>	Созвѣздіе, a constellation, <i>созвѣздія.</i>

According to the 17th paradigm (дѣтище) are declined the augmentative nouns, which form their plural in *и, ей, &c.*; e. g.

Домѣще, great house; <i>pl. домѣщи, -щей.</i>	Століще, great table; <i>pl. столящи, -щей.</i>
Дворѣще, great court, <i>дворѣщи.</i>	Козліще, <i>ж.</i> great he-goat; <i>козліщи.</i>
Мужичѣще, <i>ж.</i> big peasant, <i>мужичѣщи.</i>	Поконѣще, great room; <i>поконѣщи.</i>

Some substantives in *ое*, as *животное, an animal*; *морозженое, ice-creams*, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like the adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 18th paradigm (врѣмя) are declined nouns in *мя*. In the plural the accent is transferred to the last syllable. Such are:

Брѣмя, the burden, <i>N. pl. бремена.</i>	Плѣмя, the race, <i>N. pl. племена.</i>
Вымя, an udder, <i>вымена.</i>	Стрѣмя, the stirrup, <i>стремена.</i>
Имя, the name, <i>имена.</i>	Тѣмя, the sinciput, <i>тѣмена.</i>
Пламя, the flame (no <i>plural</i>).	Знамя, the flag, <i>знамена and знамена.</i>

By the same paradigm is declined *сѣмя, seed, plur. сѣмена*, which however has retained in the genitive plural the Slavonian inflection *сѣмянъ* (instead of *сѣмѣнъ*), to be distinguished from the proper name *Семѣнь, Simeon*.

Third
declension

According to the 19th paradigm (короба) are declined the nouns in *а* (excepting such as belong to the two following paradigms). It is necessary to observe the change of *ы* into *и* after the guttural and hissing consonants (*г, к, х; ж, ч, ш*), and of *о* into *е* after the hissings and the lingual (*ж, ч, ш; ц*), and also to remark that several nouns of the III^d declension in *а* and *я* transfer the accent in the nominative plural, and some of them also in the accusative singular, from the last syllable to the first. Such are:

Рѣба, the fish, <i>G. and N. pl. рыбы.</i>	Звѣзда, a star, <i>G. звѣзды; N. pl. звѣзды.</i>
Шляпа, a hat, шляпы.	Жена, the wife, жены; жѣны.
Побѣда, victory, побѣды.	Слуга, a servant, слуги; слуги.
Рѣза, a rose, рѣзы.	Рѣка, a river, рѣки; рѣки.
Книга, a book, книги.	Вода, water, <i>G. воды, A. воду, N. pl. воды.</i>
Собака, a dog, собаки.	Зима, winter, зимы, зиму; зимы.
Муха, a fly, мухи.	Рука, the hand, руки, руку; руки.
Кожа, the skin, кожи.	Голова, the head, головы, голову; головы.
Туча, the cloud, тучи.	Сковорода, a frying pan, сковороду, -роды.
Груша, a pear, груши.	
Вдова, a widow, <i>G. вдовы; N. pl. вдовы.</i>	

According to the 20th paradigm (пѣлка) are declined most nouns in *a* preceded by two consonants, or by one consonant and *ь* or *й*, which insert the vowel *e* or *o* in the *genitive plural*, *ь* and *й* then changing into *e*. Such are:

Ложка, the spoon; <i>G. pl. ложекъ.</i>	Койма, the hem; <i>G. pl. коёмъ.</i>
Сосна, the fir; сосенъ.	Копѣйка, a copeck; копѣекъ.
Сказка, a tale; сказокъ.	Рѣйна, a ship's yard; рѣенъ.
Шапка, a cap; шапокъ.	Свадьба, the marriage; свадебъ.
Утка, a duck; утокъ.	Судьба, fate; <i>N. pl. судьбы, G. судьбы.</i>
Овца, a sheep; <i>A. овцу, G. pl. овецъ.</i>	Тюрьма, the prison; тюрьмы, тюремъ.
Доска, a plank; доску, досокъ.	Серьга, an ear-ring; серьги, серёгъ.

The vowels *o* or *e* are inserted solely to facilitate the pronunciation; for if the two or three consonants in juxta-position can be articulated without difficulty, the insertion does not take place. Thus: просьба, *the demand*; староста, *a bailiff*; верста, *a werst*; жертва, *a victim*, form their *genitive plural*: просьбъ, старостъ, вѣрствъ, жертвъ. The *genitive plural* of война, *war*, is войнъ, and that of тайна, *a sacrament*, is таинъ.

According to the 21th paradigm (возжа) are declined nouns in *жа, ча, ша*, preceded by a consonant, as also those in *ща*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ей*. Such are:

Ханжа, a bigot; <i>G. pl. ханжей.</i>	Лѣвшя, a left-handed person; <i>G. pl. лѣвше.</i>
Парча, brocade; парчей.	Вѣкша, a squirrel; вѣкшей. [лѣвшей.]
Притча, a proverb; притчей.	Роща, a grove; рощей.
Каланча, a belfry; каланчей.	Толща, the thickness; толщей.

In the same manner are declined юноша, *young man*, and паша, *a pasha*, *G. pl. юношей* and пашей.

According to the 22th paradigm (неделя) are declined nouns in *я*, preceded by a consonant, which form their *genitive plural*

in *ѳ*, with the exception of some which form it in *ей*, and others in *ѳ* and *ей*. Such are:

Баня, the bath; *G. pl.* бань.

Пуля, a ball; пуль.

Буря, a tempest; бурь.

Гѣря, a weight; гирь.

Дыня, a melon; дынь.

Богѣня, a goddess; богѣнь.

Пустыня, a desert; пустынь.

Потѣря, a loss, потерь.

Дѣдя, the uncle; *G. pl.* дѣдей.

Брѣня, a cuirass; брѣней.

Пѣня, a fine; пѣней.

Ноздрѣя, a nostril; ноздрѣй.

Стезѣя, a footpath; стезѣй.

Дѣля, a portion; долѣй and доль.

Зарѣя, the dawn; зарѣй and зарь.

Тонѣя, fishing-net; тонѣй and тонь.

According to the 23th paradigm (пѣсня) are declined the nouns in *ля* and *ня*, preceded by another consonant, by *ѳ* or by *ѣ*, which insert in the *genitive plural* the vowel *ѳ* (one single noun takes the vowel *ѳ*), or change *ѳ* and *ѣ* into *ѳ*. Such are:

Сабля, a sabre; *G. pl.* сабель

Басня, a fable, басень

Башня, a tower; башень.

Дерѣвня, a village; дерѣвень.

Кровля, a roof; кровель

Пѣтля, a running-knot; пѣтель.

Земля, the earth, земель (*A. s.* зѣмлю).

Обѣдня, the mass; *G. pl.* обѣдней.

Кѣхня, the kitchen, кѣхонь.

Спальня, a dormitory; спальень. [лень.

Богадѣльня, an almshouse; богадѣ-

швальня, a sewing room; швальень.

Бѣйня, a slaughter-house; бѣень.

Водопѣйня, a horse-pond; водопѣень.

The substantive земля takes, in the prepositional singular with *на*, the Slavonian inflection *на землѣ*, *on the earth*, to be distinguished for *на землѣ*, *on the ground*.

According to the 24th paradigm (свѣя) are declined those nouns in *я* preceded by a vowel (with the exception of those in *ия*), which form their *genitive plural* in *ѣ*; such are:

Вѣя, the neck; *G. pl.* вѣй.

Лѣдвѣя, the hip; лѣдвѣй.

Струѣя, a current, струѣй.

Верѣя, a post; верѣй.

Шѣя, the neck; шѣй.

Змѣя, a serpent; змѣй.

Сѣя, the jay; сѣй

я, an armour; сѣруѣй.

The names of foreign towns, ending in *ѳа* and *ѳа*, are declined in the same manner, except in the *accusative*, which they form in *ѳ* (and not in *ѳ*); e. g. Гѣнуѳа, Genoa, *A.* Гѣнуѳу.

Мантуѳа, Mantua, Мантуѳу.

Падуѳа, Padua, Падуѳу.

Гѳѳа, Goa, Гѳѳу.

Some nouns in *ѳя* and *ѳя*, as: кладѳѳѳя, a storehouse; пѣрѳѳѳя, an antechamber, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 25th paradigm (судѳѳѳя) are declined the nouns in *ѳѳя*, which in the *genitive plural* change this termination into *ѳѳѳѳ*, and if it is contracted from *ѳѳя*, into *ѳѳѳѳ*. Such are:

Ладья́, a boat; *G. pl.* ладѣй.
Скамья́, a bench; скаме́й.
Статья́, an article; статѣй.
Свинья́, a pig; свинѣй.
Семья́, the family; семе́й.

Гостья́, a female guest; *G. pl.* гостѣй.
Лгу́нья, a female liar; лгу́ней.
Свѣтъя́, a female relation; свѣтѣй.
Кѣлья́, a cell; кѣліѣй.
Игу́мня, an abbess; игу́менѣй.

According to the 26th paradigm (мóлнія) are declined the nouns in *ія*, which in the *dative* and *prepositional singular* take the inflection *м* (instead of *ю*), and which form their *genitive plural* in *іѣ*. Such are:

А́рмія, an army, <i>D.</i> арміѣ; <i>G. pl.</i> арміѣй.	Стихія́, an element, <i>D.</i> стихіѣ; <i>G. pl.</i> стихіѣй.
Копія́, a copy, копіѣ; копіѣй.	Комедія́, a comedy, комедіѣ; комедіѣй.
Лілія́, a lily, ліліѣ; ліліѣй.	Трагедія́, a tragedy, трагедіѣ; трагедіѣй.
Лінія́, a line, лініѣ; лініѣй.	Витія́, an orator, витіѣ; витіѣй.

According to the 27th paradigm (страсть) are declined the feminine nouns in *ѣ*, observing at the same time the change of *я* into *а* after the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ), and remarking that several of these nouns transfer in the plural the accent to the casual inflections, from the genitive plural downwards. Such are:

Тканья́, a tissue; <i>G. pl.</i> тканеѣй.	Бровья́, an eyebrow; <i>N. pl.</i> бровѣ, <i>G.</i> бровѣѣй.
Печатьа́, a seal; печатѣѣй.	Кистья́, a tuft; кѣстѣ, кистѣѣй.
Кроватя́, a bedstead; кроватѣѣй.	Вѣтвя́, a branch. вѣтѣѣ, вѣтѣѣѣй.
Еля́, a fir; елѣѣй.	Дверя́, the door; дверѣѣ (<i>л.</i> дверьмѣ).
Свирѣля́, a pipe; свирѣлѣѣй.	Лошадя́, a horse; лошадеѣ (<i>л.</i> -дѣмѣ).
Ладоня́, the palm of the hand; ладо́неѣй.	Плетя́, a whip; плетѣѣ (<i>л.</i> плетѣмѣ).
О́сеня, the autumn; осенеѣй.	Ночя́, the night, ночѣѣ; <i>D.</i> ночамѣ.
Мечетьа́, a mosque; мечетѣѣй.	Печя́, a stove, печѣѣ; печамѣ.
Бо́лѣзня, a malady; болѣзнеѣй.	Мышьа́, a mouse, мышѣѣ; мышамѣ.
Добродѣтель, virtue; добродѣтелеѣй.	Вѣща́, a thing, вѣщѣѣ; вѣщамѣ.

According to the 28th paradigm (ложь) are declined five nouns in *ѣ*, which elide the vowel *о* of the nominative in the other cases, except in the instrumental singular; these are:

Вошьа́, a louse, <i>G.</i> вши, <i>л.</i> вошью.	Любóвь, love, <i>G.</i> любóвѣ, <i>л.</i> любóвью.
Рожа́, гус, ржи, ро́жью.	Цѣрковья́, the church, цѣрквѣ, цѣрковью.

The noun цѣрковья́ takes, in the *dative*, *instrumental* and *prepositional plural*, the hard inflection *амѣ, ами, ахѣ*: церквѣамѣ, церквѣами, о церквѣахѣ. Любóвь, used as a Christian name, retains the vowel through all the cases, *G.* Любóвѣ, &c.

Irregular
nouns.

§1. — The *irregular* nouns are such as take in some cases an inflection different to what they ought to have, according to the termination of their nominative singular; or such as form their plural in a particular manner.

I. Several nouns in *ъ* and *о* take in the *nominative plural* the inflection *а, я*, with the tonic accent (instead of *ы, у*), while the genitive remains in *овъ, овъ, ей*, and the other cases regular. Such are:

Берегъ, the shore, <i>pl.</i> берега, береговъ.	Погребъ, a cellar, <i>pl.</i> погреба, -бовъ.
Бокъ, the flank, бока	Пологъ, a curtain, пологи
Вечеръ, the evening, вечера	Профессоръ, a professor, профессора.
Голосъ, the voice, голоса	Рукавъ, a sleeve, рукава
Городъ, the town, города.	Флюгеръ, a weather-cock, флюгера.
Докторъ, a doctor, доктора	Шомполъ, a ramrod, шомпола
Жерновъ, a millstone, жернова	Хлѣвъ, a stall, хлѣва
Катеръ, a cutter, катера	Холодъ, the cold, холода
Киверъ, a shako, кивера	Сторожъ, a guard, сторожа, сторожей.
Колоколъ, a bell, колокола.	Вѣсель, a bill of exchange, -ля, -лей.
Кучеръ, a coachman, кучера	Вѣнзель, a monogram, вензеля.
Лугъ, a meadow, луга	Егеръ, a hunter, егеря
Лѣсъ, a forest, лѣса	Крендель, a cracknel, кренделя.
Мастеръ, a master, мастера	Лѣкарь, a surgeon, лекаря
Мичманъ, a midshipman, мичмана.	Писаръ, a writer, писаря.
Островъ, an island, острова	Флигель, wing of a house, флигеля.
Парусъ, a sail, паруса	Штемпель, a stamp, штампеля.
Поваръ, a cook, повара	Якоръ, an anchor, якоря.

In the same manner тетеревъ, a grouse, has in *N.* *pl.* тетерева; but in the genitive тетеревей (instead of *тетерево*).

2. Some nouns in *ъ, о, о*, form their *plural* in *ья, овъ, ѡвъ*, &c., changing the gutturals *з* and *к* before *о* into *ж* and *ч*. Such are:

Братъ, the brother, <i>pl.</i> братья, -евъ.	Пруть, a twig, <i>pl.</i> прутья, прутьевъ.
Брусъ, a beam, брусья	Полозъ, a slide, полозья.
Клинь, a wedge, клинья.	Стулъ, a chair, стулья.
Клокъ, a lock, клоки	Зять, son-in-law, зятья.
Колосъ, an ear, колосья.	Звено, a link, звенья
Колъ, a stake, колья.	Крыло, a wing, крылья
Комъ, a heap, комья.	Перо, a feather, перья.
Коньмъ, a sledge-bar, коньмья.	Полѣно, a billet of wood, полѣнья.
Кочанъ, a head of cabbage, кочанья.	Помелъ, a malkin, помелья.
Лубъ, a sheet of bark, лубья	Шило, an awl, шилья.

3. Some nouns in *ъ* have their *genitive plural* like the *nominative singular* (instead of *овъ*), e. g.

Алтынь, three coopecks; <i>pl.</i> алтыны,	Рѣкрутъ, a recruit; <i>pl.</i> рѣкруты, рѣкрутъ.
алтынь.	Сапогъ, a boot; сапоги, сапогъ.
Аршинъ, an ell; аршины, аршинъ	Солдатъ, a soldier; солдаты, солдатъ
Гренадёръ, a grenadier; гренадёры,	Турокъ, a Turk; Тúrки, Тúrокъ.
-дёръ.	Уланъ, a hulan; уланы, уланъ
Драгунъ, a dragoon; драгуны, дра-	Цыганъ, a gipsy; цыганы, цыганъ.
гунъ.	Чулóкъ, a stocking; чулки, чулóкъ.
Пудъ a pood; пуды, пудъ	Грузинъ, a Georgian; Грузины,
Разъ, a time; разы, разъ	Грузинъ.

We can however say regularly пять пудóвъ, *five poods*; нѣсколько рѣкру-товъ, *some recruits*. The substantive человекъ, *man*, has also the genitive plural like the nominative singular, but only in junction with a numeral, as пять человекъ, *five men*; in all other cases it is regular; e. g. друзья́ человекóвъ, *the friends of the men* — The substantive сажень, *a toise*, has likewise in the genitive plural сажень, the accent being transposed; and день, *the day*, in familiar language, takes the same inflection when in junction with a numeral; e. g. семь дёнъ, *seven days* (instead of семь дней).

4. The following nouns form their *plural* in different ways.

Глазъ, the eye, { have *a, ѣ, амъ*, &c. глаза́, глазь, глази́мъ; волоса́,
Волосъ, a hair, { волосъ, волоса́мъ (and also regularly волосы).

Баринъ, a lord, { change *имъ* into *a, ѣ, амъ, ами, ахъ*: б́ара, баръ,
Господинъ, master, { б́арамъ; господа́, господъ, господа́мъ; Татара (and
Татаринъ, a Tartar. { Тата́ры), Тата́рь, Тата́рамъ, &c.

Хозяинъ, a housekeeper, *plur.* хозя́ева, хозя́евъ, хозя́евамъ, &c.

Шу́ринъ, a brother-in-law, *plur.* шу́рья, шу́рьевъ, шу́рьамъ, &c.

Другъ, a friend, { have their plural in *ья, ей, ѡмъ*, &c. (другъ changes
Князь, a prince, { *ъ* into *з*): друзья́, друзей, друзья́мъ; князья́, князей;
Мужъ, a husband, { мужья́, мужей, &c. The latter, in the sense of *man*,
is regular: му́жи, мужей, мужа́мъ, &c.

Кумъ, a godfather. { form their plural in the same way by inserting the
Свять, a kinsman, { syllable *овъ*: кумовья́, кумовей; сватовья́, сватовей;
Сынъ, the son, { сыновья́, сыновей, &c. Сынъ, with a *figurative* mean-
ing, is regular: сы́ны, сыно́въ, &c.

Сосѣдъ, a neighbour, { take in the plural the soft inflection *и, ей, ѡмъ*,
Холопъ, a bondman, { &c.: сосѣди, сосѣдей, сосѣдя́мъ (and also regular
Чёртъ, the devil, { сосѣды, сосѣдовъ); холо́пи, холо́пей; чёрти, чертей,
черта́мъ, &c.

Солнце, the sun, { take the masculine termination: *и, овъ, амъ, от и*,
Облако, a cloud, { *овъ, амъ*, &c.: солнцы, солнцевъ; обла́ки, облако́въ
Очко, a pip, point { (and also regular: обла́ка, облакъ); очки́, очко́въ;
Ушко, a handle, { ушкы́, ушко́въ, ушка́мъ, &c.

Вѣ́ко, the eyelid, { form their plural in *и, ѣ, амъ*, &c.: вѣ́ки, вѣ́къ, вѣ́камъ;
Я́блоко, an apple, { я́блоки, я́блокъ (and я́блоковъ)

Небо, ⁶ heaven, Чудо, a wonder,	{ have in the plural небеса, небесъ, небесамъ; чудеса, чудесъ, чудесамъ, &c. Небо, in the sense of <i>palate</i> , has no plural, and чудо, signifying <i>a monster</i> , is regular: чуда, чудъ, чудамъ, &c.
Око, the eye, Ухо, the ear,	{ form their plural in и, ей, амъ, with the permutation of the consonant очн, очей, очамъ, очамъ; ушн, ушей, ушамъ, ушамъ (instead of ушамъ). This inflection is properly the Slavonian dual, the plural, which is sometimes used in poetry, is очеса, ушеса
Дитя, a child,	{ which in the singular has preserved the Slavonian declension G. D. and P. дитяти, I. дитятемъ and дитятю, has in plural N. дѣти, G. and A. дѣтей, D. дѣтямъ, I. дѣтьми, P. о дѣтяхъ

Курьца, a hen, *plur.* кúры, куръ, кúрамъ, &c

Слюба, the slaver, *plur.* слюби, слюбей, слюбиямъ, &c., with the soft inflection.

5. Some nouns have a double inflection in the ⁶*plural*, the one regular, the other irregular.

a) Some have two inflections in the nominative only, and without any difference in the meaning of the word; such are:

Вѣкъ, an age, <i>pl.</i> вѣки and вѣка, вѣковъ.	Поясъ, girdle, <i>pl.</i> поясы and пояса, -совъ
Годъ, a year, гóды and года, годóвъ	Рогъ, a horn, рóги and рога, рогóвъ
Домъ, a house, дóмы and дома, домóвъ	Снѣгъ, snow, снѣга and снѣга, снѣгóвъ
Кóрпусъ, body, кóрпусы and корпуса, -совъ	Стогъ, a stack, стóги and стога, стогóвъ
Кúполъ, cupola, кúполы and купола, -ловъ	Стругъ, a bark, стрúги and струга, -говъ [-мовъ]
Мѣдъ, honey, мѣды and меда, медóвъ	Тѣремъ, a room, тѣремы and терема, -овъ
О'корокъ, a ham, о'корки and о'корока, -овъ	Край, the brink, край and край, краевъ

b) Others have two inflections through all the cases, the irregular inflection being used where the substantive has a collective meaning; such are:

Батогъ, a stick, <i>pl.</i> батогѣ, батогóвъ, and батóжья, батóжьевъ, &c.
Внукъ, the grandson, внúки, внúковъ, and внúчата, внúчатъ, &c
Крюкъ, a hook, крюкѣ, крюкóвъ, and крючья, крючьевъ
Ободъ, a felloe, ободы, ободóвъ, and обóдья, обóдьевъ.
Лоскутъ, a shred, лóскуты, лóскутовъ, and лоскúтъя, лоскúтъевъ
Струпъ, a scurf, стрúпы, стрúповъ, and стрúпья, стрúпьевъ
Сукъ, a branch, сúки, сúковъ, and сúчья, сúчьевъ
Чѣрепъ, a potsherd, черепá, черепóвъ, and черѣпья, черѣпьевъ.
Воламырь, <i>m.</i> a tubercle; волмырѣ, волмырѣй, and волмырья, волмырьевъ
Камень, <i>m.</i> a stone; камни, камнѣй, and камѣнья, камѣньевъ.

Корень, *m.* a root; корни, корней, and коренья, кореньевъ.

Пузырь, *m.* a bladder; пузыри, пузырей, and пузырья, пузыревъ.

Пупырь, *m.* a pimple; пупыри, пупырей, and пупыря, пупыревъ.

Уголь, *m.* the charcoal; угли, углей, and уголья, угольевъ.

Дерево, a tree; дерева, деревъ, and деревья, деревьевъ.

Дыръ, a hole; дыры, дыръ, and дырья, дыревъ.

Щель, *f.* a chink; щели, щелей, and щельевъ.

c) Others again have two inflections with totally different meanings; such are:

Зубъ, a tooth (in the mouth), *pl.* зѹбы, зубовъ, and tooth (of a saw), зѹбья, зѹбовевъ.

Капля, a drop (of water), капли, капель, and drops (in medicine), капля, каплей.

Листъ, a leaf (of paper), листы, листовъ, and a leaf (of a tree), листья, листьевъ.

Мужъ, a man, мѹже, мужей, and a husband, мужья, мужей.

Мѣхъ, a fur, мѣхи, мѣховъ, and a pair of bellows, мѣха, мѣховъ.

Образъ, the form, образы, образовъ, and an image, образа, образовъ.

Поводъ, a motive, поводы, поводовъ, and a rein, поводья, поводьевъ.

Сѹдно, a vessel (utensil), сѹдны, сѹденъ, and a vessel (ship), суда, судовъ.

Хлѣбъ, a bread, хлѣбы, хлѣбовъ, and a corn, хлѣба, хлѣбовъ.

Цвѣтъ, a flower, цвѣты, цвѣтовъ, and a colour, цвѣта, цвѣтовъ.

d) Lastly there is one substantive which in the plural has three inflections, a different meaning being conveyed by each; viz.

Колѣно, { *a tribe, pl.* колѣна, колѣнъ, колѣнамъ, &c.
 the knee, pl. колѣни, колѣней, колѣнямъ, &c.
 a joint (of a plant), pl. колѣнья, колѣньевъ, колѣньямъ, &c.

6. The declension of the following nouns is quite irregular:

Господъ, the Lord, { is declined like a noun in *ъ*, with the hard inflection
 G. Господа, *D.* Господу, *I.* Господомъ; the *vocative*
 is: Гоподи.

Христосъ, Christ, { cuts off in all the other cases the syllable *ос*: *G.* Христѣ,
 D. Христѹ, *I.* Христомъ, *P.* о Христѣ, *V.* Христѣ.

Дочь, a daughter, { insert in the inflections of the cases the syllable *ер*.
 Мать, the mother, { *G.* and *D.* дочери и матери, *I.* дочерью и матерью,
 plur. N. дочери и матери, *G.* дочерей и матерей,
 I. дочерьми и матерями, &c.

Плѣмень, flame, { although masculine, take in the *genitive, dative* and
 Путь, the way. { *prepositional* singular the feminine inflection *и*: плѣмени,
 путѣ; but the instrumental case is regular (плѣменемъ,
 путѣмъ).

EXERCISES IN THE DECLENSION OF SUBSTANTIVES.

Nominative The master of the garden and the mistress of the house.
and
Genitive. Хозяинъ садъ и хозяйка домъ.

The garden of the master and the house of the mistress.
Садъ хозяинъ и домъ хозяйка.

The roaring of the lions; the song of the nightingale; the
Рыканіе левъ; пѣніе соловей;

bellowing of the bull, of the ox and of the cow; the neighing
Мычаніе быкъ, волъ и корова; ржаніе

of the horses; the barking of the dog; the cooing of the pigeons;
лошадь *f*; лай собака; воркованье голубь *m*;

the cawing of the crows; the croaking of the frogs; the howling
карканье воронъ; кваканье лягушка; вой

of the wolf; the buzzing of the bees, of the cock-chafers and
волкъ; жужжаніе пчела, жукъ и

of the flies; the bleating of the rams and of the ewes. A chimney
муха; блеяніе баранъ и овца. Каминъ

without fire; windows without panes; groats without butter;
безъ огонь *m*; окно безъ стекло; каша безъ

saddles without stirrups; a charge without ball; islands and
седло безъ стремя; зарядъ безъ пуля; островъ и

meadows without trees; cooks, coachmen and labourers without
лугъ безъ дерево; поваръ, кучеръ и работникъ безъ

work; children without mother; soldiers without muskets;
работа; дитя безъ мать; солдатъ безъ ружьё;

muskets without flints; a statue without arms and without
ружьё безъ кремёнъ *m*; статуя безъ рука и безъ

ears; young bears and young lions without hair; vessels
ухо; медвѣжонокъ и львёнокъ безъ шерсть *f*; корабль *m*

without hammocks; ships without oars; tea without sugar and
безъ койка; судно безъ весло; чай безъ сахаръ и

without cream. A bunch of pens; a dozen of cups, of plates
 безъ сливки *f*. Пукъ перо; дюжина чашка, тарелка

and of glasses; five scores of trouts; half a score of melons;
 въ стаканы; сотня морель *f*; десятокъ дыня;

a quantity of geese, of ducks and of swans; herds of cattle;
 множество гусь *m*, утка и лебедь *m*; стадо скотъ;

studs of horses. The men of antiquity, and the husbands
 табунъ лошадь *f*. Мужъ древность и мужъ

of the wives. The flowers of the gardens and the colours
 женъ. Цветъ садъ и цветъ

of the rainbow. The leaves of paper and the leaves of the trees.
 радуга. Листъ бумага и листъ дерево.

The teeth of the mouth and the teeth of a comb. The tribes
 зубъ во (*prep.*) ротъ и зубъ у гребень *m*. Колѣно

of the Israelites, the knees of a man, and the joints of plants.
 Израильтянинъ, колѣно у человекъ, и колѣно растѣніе.

The taking of herrings on the coasts of America has been very
 ловъ сельдь *f* у берегъ Америка былъ очень

profitable to the English, the Swedes, the Dutch and
 выгоденъ для (*gen.*) Англичанинъ, Шведъ, Голландецъ и
 the French.

Французъ.

Advice to friends. Glory to God. Woe to the enemies. *Nominative*
 Советъ другъ. Слава Богъ. Горе врагъ. *and Dative.*

The general order to the troops. Obedience to the laws. Give
 Приказъ войско. Повиновѣніе законъ. Дай

food to the geese, to the hens, to the pigeons and to the
 въсть гусь *m*, курица, голубъ *m* и

little dogs. To act conformably to the laws of honour.
 щенокъ. Поступать соответственно правило честь.

To live according to his situation. A law given as well
 Жить прилично состояніе. Законъ, данный какъ

for the nobles as for the citizens. To be against the wishes
 дворянинъ, такъ и мѣщанинъ. Протѣвѣться желаніе
 of the children, and the desire of the parents. The books,
 дитѣ, и воля родитель. Книжа,
 the pens and the papers belong to the scholars, and not
 перо и тетрадь принадлежатъ ученикъ, а не
 to the masters. The fields and the meadows belong to the
 учитель. Поле и лугъ принадлежатъ
 father and to the mother, and the gardens, as well as the forests
 отецъ и мать, а садъ, какъ и лѣсъ,
 to the sons and to the daughters. To be agreeable to the men
 сынъ и дочь. Нравиться мужчѣна
 and to be disagreeable to the women. The verdure is agreeable
 и не нравиться жѣнщина. Зелень нравится
 to the eyes. The pictures please the sisters and the flowers
 глазъ. Картина нравятся сестра, а цвѣтъ
 the brothers. Useful to the country; agreeable to God and
 братъ. Пользѣный отѣчество; прѣятный Богъ и
 to men; faithful to the sovereign; dear to friends; agreeable
 люди; вѣрный государъ; любѣзный другъ; милый
 to children. Man is known by his face, by his voice, by
 дитѣ. Человѣкъ узнается по лицѣ, по голосъ, по
 his figure, by his walk and by the motions of his body. Tourists
 ростъ, по походка и по тѣлодвиженіе. Туристъ
 travel in Switzerland, in France, in Italy, in Germany,
 путешествуютъ по Швейцарія, Франція, Италія, Германія,
 in America and in Egypt.
 Амѣрика а Египетъ.

native The brothers have bought houses, gardens, a village and
 d. Братъ купили домъ, садъ, деревня и
 alive. fields, and have sold oxen, cows, horses and a carriage.
 поле, а продали быкъ, корова, лошадь, и карѣта.

To read a fable, draw a picture, write letters, play an air,
Читáть бáсня, рисо́вать картинá, писáть писъмó, игрáть пѣсня,

mend pens. To visit the brothers and the sisters, the mothers
чинить перó. Посвѣщáть брать, и сестрá, мáть

and the daughters, the fathers and the sons. To buy a hat
и дочь, отéць и сынъ. Купить шля́па

and a cap, gloves and shoes, stockings and garters.
и ша́пка, перча́тка и башма́къ, чуло́къ и подвѣзка.

The conqueror has vanquished the troops and has subjected
Завоева́тель побѣдилъ во́йско, и покоря́лъ

the people. Peter defeated the Swedes, conquered Esthonia
наро́дъ. Петро́ъ разби́лъ Шве́дь, завоева́лъ Эстля́ндя

and Livonia, founded the city of Saint-Petersburg, and civilised
и Ливля́ндя, основа́лъ го́родъ Санктпетербу́ргъ, и просвѣтилъ

Russia. The Russians have conquered the Tartars, the Turks,
Росси́я. Росси́янинъ побѣжда́ли Тата́ринъ, Ту́рокъ,

the Swedes, the French and the Persian. The rains refresh
Шве́дь, Францу́зь и Перси́янинъ. Дождь т освѣжа́ють

the earth, and the frosts destroy the grass-hoppers.

земля́, и холо́дъ истребля́ють сара́нча (*sing.*).

Children, be attentive! John, come here! Soldiers, Vocative.

Дитя́, бу́дьте приле́жны! Ива́нъ, прѣйди́ сюда! Во́инъ,

fight valliantly! God, preserve the Emperor! Lord,
сража́йтесь хра́бро! Богъ, спаси́ (*acc.*) Царь! Госпо́дь,

have mércy upon me!

помилу́й меня́!

The scholars write with a slate-pencil or with a pen and Nominative
Учени́къ пишу́тъ гри́фель т или перó и Instru-
mental.

iak. John plays with Alexis and with Basil, and Mary
черни́ла. Ива́нъ игра́етъ съ Алекси́й и съ Васи́лѣй, а Ма́рья

plays with Sophia and with Amy. A tart with almonds;
игра́етъ съ Со́фья и съ Любо́вь. Пиро́гъ съ минда́ль т;

pots • with flowers; a basin of water; a man of wit and горшóкъ съ цвѣтъ; кáдка съ водá; чéловѣкъ съ умъ и of genius; a gallery of pictures. Towns with a fortress and съ гѣнiй; галерéя съ картiна. Гóродъ съ кремль и a port; trees with leaves, flowers and fruits; shakos with гáвань f; дѣрево съ листь, цвѣтъ и плодъ; кiверъ съ plumes; a room with doors; bread with salt; water with султáнъ; кóмната съ дверь f; хлѣбъ съ соль f; водá съ wine; wine with water; professors with pupils; a letter with винó; вино съ водá; профессóръ съ ученикъ; письмó съ money. To draw with a pencil, to paint with a brush and дѣныи f. Рисовáть карандашъ, писать кисть f и colours. The shop-keeper trades in tallow, in soap, in milk, крáска. Купéцъ торгúють салó, мыло, молоко, in flour, in groats, in wines, in beer, in cloth, in linen and мукá, крупá, винó, пиво, сукнó, полотнó и in laces, and the neighbours of the shop-keeper trade in oxen, кру́жево, а сосѣдъ купéцъ торгúють волъ, in sheep and in horses. Palaces with towers; churches with барáнъ и лóшадъ f. Дворéцъ съ бáшня; цѣрковь f съ steeples; houses with windows; buildings with galleries, колоко́льня; домъ съ окнó; здáние съ галерéя; regiments with colours. The mountains abound in gold, полкъ съ знáмя. Горá избiляютъ зóлото, in silver, in copper, in iron, in quick-silver and in lead. серебрó, мѣдь f, желiзо, ртуть f и свинецъ.

Nominative
and Prepo-
sitional.

The fables of the bull and the ram, of the ass and the Бáсня о быкъ и барáнъ, объ о́сѣлѣ и nightingale; of the cicada and the ant; of the oak and соловѣй; о кузнéчикъ и муравѣй; о дубъ и the reed; of the fox and the crow; of the wolf and the lamb. тростни́къ; о лиси́ца и вóронъ; о волкъ и ягнѣнокъ.

The tales of the guardian-angel, of John and Mary; * the
Сказка объ ангелъ-хранитель, объ Иванъ и Мάρья;

histories of Sergius the hermit; of the hero and the genius.
повѣсть о Сѣргіѣ пустынникъ; о герой и гѣній.

To speak of games, of lessons, of the time, of the place, of
Говорить объ игра, объ урокъ, о время, о мѣсто, объ
circumstances. In the work there is said a great deal about
обстоятельство. Въ сочинѣніе говорятъ много о

honour and infamy, about virtue and vice, about courage
честь и безчѣстіе, о добродѣтель и порокъ, о храбрость

and pusillanimity. In the water live the fishes, the frogs and
и малодушіе. Въ водѣ живутъ рыба, лягушка и

the mollusca; and in the forests live the lions, the bears,
слизень *m*; 'и въ лѣсъ оживутъ левъ, медвѣдь *m*,

the foxes and the hares.

лисица и заяць.

The books of the scholar please the master. The light The different cases.
Книга ученикъ нравятся (*dat.*) учитель. Свѣтъ

of the sun illumines the earth with its rays. The colours of
солнце озаряетъ земля лучъ. Цвѣтъ

the rose are agreeable to the eyes. The friends of humanity
роза (*суть*) приятны глазъ. Другъ челоуѣчество

do good to men. In the garden flourish roses with
дѣлаютъ добро люди. Въ (*prep.*) садѣ цвѣтутъ роза съ (*prep.*)

thorns; for there is no rose without thorns. The children
шипъ; ибо нѣтъ (*gen.*) роза безъ (*instr.*) шипъ. Дѣтя

wash themselves with the water of the river. A glass of
умываються вода рѣка. Стаканъ съ (*instr.*)

water is on the table of the room. Tears of joy glisten
вода стоитъ на (*prep.*) столѣ комната. Слеза радость блестятъ

in the eyes of the mother. The glory of the wicked is
въ (*prep.*) глазъ мать. Слава злодѣй (*естъ*)

without stability; but the names of the beneficent shine
непродолжительна; но имя благодѣтель сіяютъ

in eternity. Happiness on earth consists in
въ (*prep.*) вѣчность. Счастье на (*prep.*) землѣ состоитъ въ (*prep.*)

tranquillity of mind and in purity of conscience. Young people
спокойствіе душъ и въ чистотѣ совѣсть *f.* Юношѣ

love the song of the nightingale, on the bank of a river,
любятъ пѣніе соловѣй, на (*prep.*) берегъ ручѣй,

by light of the moon. To tell the truth is the duty
при (*prep.*) свѣтѣ лунѣ. Говорить правда есть долгъ

of children. To love God with heart and soul. The ants and
дѣтя. Любитъ Богъ сердце и душѣ. Муравѣй и

the beavers may serve as a pattern to man. An excursion
бобръ могутъ служить (*instr.*) примѣръ человекъ. Поѣздка

to Moscow and to Kiew. The entrance of the room
въ (*acc.*) Москвѣ и въ Кіевѣ. Входъ въ (*acc.*) библіотека

of reading (reading-room), Give to the master the book
для (*gen.*) чтеніе. Подай учитель тетрадь

of verses on the occasion of the feast. One must rise
со (*instr.*) стихъ на (*acc.*) слѣчай праздникъ. Надобно вставать

in the morning, work in the day, rest in the evening, and
(*instr.*) утро, работать день *m.*, отдыхать вечеръ, и

sleep at night. The roar of canons and the sound of bells
опять ночь *f.* Громъ пушка и звонъ колоколъ

announced to the citizens the arrival of the conqueror
возвѣстили гражданъ о (*prep.*) прибытіе побѣдитель

of the enemies of the country.

врагъ отечество.

THE ADJECTIVE.

32. — The *adjectives* (прилагательныя имена) Division of the adjectives. in the Russian language are of three kinds: 1) The *qualifying* (качественныя) adjectives, as: чѣрный кафтанъ, *a black coat*; тихое дитя, *a quiet child*; весёлая жизнь, *a joyous life*. 2) The *possessive* (притяжательныя) adjectives, as: отцовъ сынъ, *the father's son*; лисья шкура, *a fox skin*; золотое кольцо, *a gold ring*; лѣтний садъ, *the summer garden*. 3) The *numeral* (числительныя) adjectives, as: два стола, *two tables*; второй мѣсяцъ, *the second month*.

To the adjectives belong also the *possessive*, *demonstrative*, *interrogative* and other pronouns, as also the *participles*, which are at times used as simple adjectives. The *Numeral* adjectives, which in Russian have their peculiar inflections, will be treated of in a separate article.

33. — The *qualifying* adjectives, or such as express the quality of an object, end in *ый* and *ий*, or, with the accent, in *оу* (neut. *ое* and *ее*, fem. *ая* and *яя*); e. g. добрый, *good*; лёгкій, *light*; синій, *blue*; сухой, *dry*; большой, *great*. Qualifying adjectives.

34. — The *possessive* adjectives, most of which are peculiar to the Russian language, are divided into *individual*, *common*, *material* and *circumstantial*. Possessive adjectives.

1. The *individual* or *special* (личныя, частныя), possessive adjectives, which mark the relation of an object to an individual, or in other words to an animate or personified being, end in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ* and *ынъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), or in *ъ* (neut. *е*, fem. *я*), and are formed from the names of the objects in question by changing *ъ* and *о* into *овъ*

(or into *евъ* after the lingual or a hissing consonant); *и* and *ь* into *евъ*; *а*, *я* and *ъ* into *инъ*, and *ѹа* into *ѹинъ*, remembering however that in this formation the adjective follows the genitive inflection of the substantive; e. g. *сыновъ*, *the son's*; *Марковъ*, *Mark's*; *Львовъ*, *Leon's*; *Христовъ*, *Christ's*; *стражѣвъ*, *the guardian's*; *отцѣвъ*, *the father's*; *Андрѣевъ*, *Andrew's*; *царѣвъ*, *the king's*; *Никитинъ*, *Nicetas's*; *дядинъ*, *the uncle's*; *свекрѣвинъ*, *mother-in-law's*; *материнъ*, *the mother's*; *лѣвѣицѣвъ*, *the girl's* (from *сынъ*, *Марко*, *Левъ*, *gen. Льва*, *Христосъ*, *gen. Христа*, *стражѣ*, *отцѣ*, *gen. отца*, *Андрѣй*, *царь*, *Никита*, *дядя*, *свекрѣвъ*, *мать*, *gen. матери*, *дѣвѣица*). The termination *ь* is only found in the adjective *Господень*, *the Lord's* (from *Господь*), and in some few others in the ecclesiastical Slavonian.

To the above rule the following are exceptions: *Яковлевъ*, *James's*; *братнинъ*, *the brother's*; *мужнинъ*, *the husband's*; and also *Божій*, *God's*, formed from *Яковъ*, *братъ*, *мужъ* and *Богъ*. — We have still to remark that it is from these individual possessive adjectives that the patronymics, of which we have already spoken (§ 21), are formed; e. g. *Ивановичъ* and *Ивановна*, *John's son and daughter*; *Павловичъ* and *Павловна*, *Paul's son and daughter*; *Яковлевичъ* and *Яковлевна*, *James's son and daughter*; *Никитичъ* and *Никитична*, *Nicetas's son and daughter*.

2. The *common* or *generic* (общія, родовыя) possessive adjectives, which mark the relation of an object to all the individuals of the same species, have one principal termination, viz. *иѹ*, *овиѹ* or *евиѹ* (neut. *ѹе*, fem. *ѹя*), and some particular terminations; these are: *скѹиѹ*, *нѹиѹ*, *иѹиѹ*, *овѹиѹ*, *нѹиѹ* (neut. *ѹе* and *ѹеѹ*, fem. *ѹя* and *ѹяѹ*), and are formed from the names of animate, inanimate and abstract objects: e. g. *рыбиѹ*, *of a fish*; *медвѣжиѹ*, *of a bear*; *птичиѹ*, *of*

a bird; клоповѣй, *of a bug*; коневѣй, *of a horse*; скотскій, *of cattle*; гусиный, *of a goose*; домовый, *domestic*; паровой, *of steam*; рѣчной, *fluvial*; душевный, *of the soul*; жизненный, *vital*; сыновній, *filial* (from рыба, медвѣдь, птица, клопъ, конь, скотъ, гусь, домъ, паръ, рѣка, душа, жизнь, сынъ).

To the individual and common possessive adjectives belong also several Russian family names; e. g. Дми́триевъ, Пу́шкинъ, Завадо́вскій, as also several names of towns and villages; e. g. Ка́шинъ, Боро́динъ, Смоле́нскъ, &c.

3. The *material* (вещественныя) possessive adjectives, which indicate the material of which a thing is made, are formed from the names of material objects by means of the terminations *ый, ный, яный* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), as: золо́той, *of gold*; желе́зный, *of iron*; сере́бряный, *of silver*; дере́вьянный, *of wood* (from зо́лото, желе́зо, серебро, дере́во).

4. The *circumstantial* (обстоятельствённые) possessive adjectives are formed from nouns and adverbs signifying *time* and *place*, by means of the terminations *нй* (neut. *ее*, fem. *яя*), and in the names of months, by the termination *скй* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*); as: лѣтнй, *of summer*; ны́нѣшнй, *actual*; э́тй, *of this place*; ма́ртовскй, *of March*; ию́льскй, *of July* (from лѣто, ны́нѣ, тамъ, мартъ,

35. — The properties of the adjectives in Russian are: the *gender* (родъ), the *number* (число), the *case* (паде́жъ), the *scope of the termination* (у́сѣченіе оконча́нія), and the *degrees of signification* or *degrees of the qualities* (сте́пени ка́чествъ), and

Properties of
adjectives.

these properties are all marked by particular inflections.

Gender, number, case. 36. — As the adjective must agree in gender, number and case with the substantive which it qualifies, it has three terminations to indicate the difference of *gender*, two for the different *numbers* and seven for the *cases*.

Апоcope of the termination. 37. — As the adjectives are used for two different purposes, firstly simply to qualify the noun to which they belong, as: *добрый человекъ, a good man; новая шляпа, a new hat*; and secondly to form the attribute of the proposition, as: *человекъ (есть) добрѣ, the man is good; шляпа была нова, the hat was new*; they have in Russian two different terminations, the one *full* (полное), the other *apocopated* (устьченное). These two terminations are as follows:

SINGULAR.

	Masculine.	Neuter.	Feminine.
Full term:	ый (ой), ий;	ое, ее;	ая, яя;
Апоc. term:	ъ, ъ;	о, е;	а, я;
Examples:	{ нѳвый, синій; нѳвое, синее; нѳвая, синяя; нѳвъ, синѣ; нѳво, синѣ; нѳва, синя;		

PLURAL.

	Masculine.	Neut. and Fem.
Full term:	ые, ie;	ыя, ія.
Апоc. term:	ы, и;	ы, и.
Examples:	{ нѳвые, синіе; нѳвыя, синія. нѳвы, сині; нѳвы, сині.	

These two examples *нѳвый, new*, and *синій, blue*, show that the apocopated is formed from the full termination, by changing *ый* and *ий*, (or *ой* with the accent) into *ъ* and *ь*, according to

the nature of the preceding consonant, for the masculine† and by cutting of the final vowel in the other inflections. In this formation, the vowel *e* or *o* is inserted between two consonants in the masculine, in order to facilitate the pronunciation, and the semi-vowels *ь* and *й* are changed into *e*, observing that the tonic accent, which remains on the same syllable in the inflections of the full termination, is often transposed in the apocopated termination, sometimes to the inserted vowel of the masculine, sometimes to the first syllable, at other times to the inflection of the feminine, and occasionally to that of the neuter and the plural; e. g.

бѣлый, white, <i>афос. терм.</i> бѣлѣ, лѣ, лѣ.	вѣрный, true, <i>афос.</i> вѣренѣ, рно, рна.
здоровый, wholesome, здоровѣ, ѣво, ѣва.	тяжкій, heavy, тяжекѣ, жко, жкѣ.
дорогой, dear, дорогѣ, ого, огѣ.	истинный, veritable, истиненѣ, инно, инна.
великій, great, великѣ, ѣко, ѣкѣ.	древній, ancient, древенѣ, вие, вня.
любі́й, stout, люжѣ, жѣ, жѣ.	полный, full, полонѣ, лно, лнѣ.
хороші́й, good, хорошѣ, ошѣ, ошѣ.	злой, evil, золѣ, зно, знѣ.
живой, live, живѣ, ѣво, ѣвѣ.	крѣпкій, strong, крѣпокѣ, нко, нкѣ.
сухой, dry, сухѣ, сѣхо, сѣхѣ.	лёгкій, light, легокѣ, гко, гкѣ.
высокій, high, высокѣ, окѣ, окѣ.	горькій, bitter, горекѣ, рько, рькѣ.
быстрый, rapid, быстрѣ, тро, трѣ.	сильный, vigorous, силѣнѣ, льно, льнѣ.
firm, твёрдый, ѣрдо, рѣѣ.	спокойный, quiet, спокоенѣ, ѣнно, ѣнна.

The following are exceptions to this rule: достѣйный, **worthy*; блаженный, *happy*; надменный, *proud*, and совершенный, *perfect*, which form: достѣинѣ, ѣнно, ѣнна; блаженѣ, надменѣ, совершенѣ, ѣнна.

The qualifying adjectives have both terminations, except радѣ, *joyous*, and гораздѣ, *except*, which have only the apocopated, while большѣй, *great*, and меньшѣй, *little*, have only the full termination. The individual possessive adjectives have only the apocopated termination, while the material and circumstantial possessive adjectives have only the full termination. The same is the case with several common possessive adjectives, with the exception of such as end in *ій*, which in the singular have the full, and in the plural the apocopated termination.

38. — The qualifying adjectives have five degrees ^{Degrees of signification.} of signification, viz. the *positive*, the *comparative*, the *superlative*, the *diminutive* and the *augmentative*.

1.^d The *positive* (положительная стéпень) is indicated by the ordinary terminations, full and apocopated; e. g. бѣлый and бѣль, *white*; сухой and сухъ, *dry*; синій and синь, *blue*.

2. The *comparative* (сравнительная стéпень) is marked in the full termination by the inflections *нѣйшій, айшій, шій* (neut. *ее*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated termination by the invariable inflections *нѣ* and *е*, and is formed in three different ways:

1) By changing the termination of the positive, preceded by any consonant except a guttural, into *нѣйшій* for the full, and into *нѣ* for the apocopated termination; e. g.

бѣлый, white, *comp.* бѣлѣйшій and бѣлѣе, whiter.
 слабый, weak, слабѣйшій and слабѣе, weaker
 живой, live, живѣйшій and живѣе, more live.
 полный, full, полнѣйшій and полнѣе, more full.

From this rule are excepted the following adjectives, which though they have the full termination *нѣйшій*, have the apocopated in *е*, changing at the same time the mutable consonant.

богатый, rich, *comp. full term.* богатѣйшій, *apoc. term.* богаче.
 дешёвый, cheap, дешёвѣйшій, дешёвѣе.
 густой, thick, густѣйшій, гуще.
 красивый, handsome, красивѣйшій, краше.
 (No красивый, *red*, forms regularly *краснѣе*)
 крутой, steep, крутѣйшій, круче.
 поздний, tardy, позднѣйшій, позже.
 простой, simple, простѣйшій, проще (and простѣе.)
 твёрдый, firm, твердѣйшій, твёрже.
 толстый, thick, толстѣйшій, толще.
 частый, frequent, частѣйшій, чаще.
 чистый, pure, чистѣйшій, чище.

The adjectives горячій, *burning*; лысый, *bald*; сѣзый, *dove-coloured*; свѣжій, *fresh*; and others in *зый, сый, жый, ч* have only the apocopated termination *нѣ*: горячѣе, свѣжѣе.

2) By changing the termination of the positive, preceded by one of the gutturals (г, к, х), into *аѣиѣ* for the full, and into *е* for the apocopated termination, permuting the consonant at the same time; e. g.

строгѣиѣ, strict, *comp.* строгѣѣиѣ and строгѣе, stricter.
 крепкѣиѣ, strong, крепчѣѣиѣ and крепче, stronger.
 вѣтхѣиѣ, old, вѣтшѣѣиѣ and вѣтше, older.

Exceptions. — Most of the adjectives in *ѣиѣ*, *кѣиѣ*, *хѣиѣ*, have not the full termination of the comparative; and also the following adjectives form their comparatives in different ways:

долгѣиѣ, long, *comp.* full term. должѣѣиѣ, *apoc. term.* долѣше.
 дорогѣиѣ, dear, дражѣѣиѣ, дороже.
 далѣкѣиѣ and дальнѣиѣ, far, дальнѣѣиѣ, далѣше.
 близкѣиѣ, near, ближѣѣиѣ, ближѣ.
 глубокѣиѣ, deep, глубочѣѣиѣ, глубѣше.
 горькѣиѣ, bitter, горчѣѣиѣ, горче.
 (No горькѣиѣ, *bad*, takes the Slav. inflection горшѣиѣ and горше.)
 короткѣиѣ and краткѣиѣ, short, кратчѣѣиѣ, короче.
 рѣдкѣиѣ, rare, рѣдчѣѣиѣ, рѣже.
 сладкѣиѣ, sweet, сладчѣѣиѣ, слаще.
 тонкѣиѣ, thin, тончѣѣиѣ, тонѣше.
 тяжкѣиѣ, heavy, тягчѣѣиѣ, тягче.
 широкѣиѣ, broad, широчѣѣиѣ, шире.
 гадкѣиѣ, dirty, } These five { гаже.
 гладкѣиѣ, smooth, } have not the { глаже.
 жидкѣиѣ, liquid, } full term. { жѣже.
 узкѣиѣ, narrow, } of the com- { ѣже.
 слабкѣиѣ, slack, } parative. { слабѣже.

3) The inflection *ѣиѣ* for the comparative is only found in the following adjectives, three of which take their comparative from another root:

высѣкѣиѣ, high; *comp.* full term. высѣиѣ, *apoc. term.* выше.
 молодѣиѣ, young; младѣиѣ, моложе.
 низкѣиѣ, low; низѣиѣ, ниже.
 старѣиѣ, old; старѣиѣ and старѣѣиѣ, старѣше and старѣе.
 худѣиѣ, bad; худѣиѣ, хѣже.
 великѣиѣ (and большѣиѣ), great; большѣиѣ, большѣе.
 малѣиѣ (and меньшѣиѣ), little; меньшѣиѣ, меньше.
 хорошѣиѣ, good; лучшѣиѣ, лучше.

1. Care must be taken not to confound the comparative of the adjectives *дольше*, *longer*; *тоньше*, *finer*; *дальше*, *more distant*; *больше*, *greater*; *меньше*, *less*, with that of the adverbs *дольше*, *longer*; *тоньше*, *finer*; *дальше*, *further*; *больше*, *more*; *меньше*, *less*. But this difference exists only in the above five words, the comparative of the adverbs being in every other instance similar to that of the adjectives in the apocopated termination.

2. The apocopated termination of the comparative sometimes takes the preposition *по*, which softens and diminishes the force; e. g. *побълье*, *a little whiter*; *потоньше*, *a little finer*; *получше*, *a little better*.

3. Such adjectives as want one of the terminations of the comparative, supply its place with the adverb *больше* before the positive; e. g. *больше узкий*, *narrower*; *больше жидкий*, *more liquid*; *больше радъ*, *more joyous*; *больше гораздъ*, *more expert*.

3. The *superlative* (*превосходная степенъ*) in Russian is not marked by any particular inflection, except in the four following adjectives:

великій, great, *compar.* *большій*; *superl.* *величайшій*, greatest.
высокій, high, *вышій*; *высочайшій*, highest.
малый, little, *меньшій*; *малѣйшій*, least.
низкій, low, *нижшій*; *нижайшій*, lowest.

In all the other adjectives, in the full termination, the superlative is expressed by that of the comparative, the words *изъ всѣхъ*, *of all*, being understood, or the particle *най* being placed before it, or also by that of the positive, placing before it the words *самый* (*n.* *самое*, *f.* *самая*), as: *легчайшій* (*изъ всѣхъ*), *наилегчайшій* or *самый лёгкій*, *the lightest*; *лучшій* (*изъ всѣхъ*), *наилучшій*, or *самый лучшій* (improperly, for *самый хорошій*), *the best*. In the apocopated termination the superlative is the same as the comparative, adding the word *всѣхъ* or *всего*, e. g. *всѣхъ легче*, *the lightest*; *всѣхъ лучше*, *the best*; *всего важнѣе*, *the most important*; *всего труднѣе*, *the most difficult*.

4. The *diminutive* degree (уменьшительная стéпень) is used to mark the diminution of quality, indicating either a want or smallness of any quality in an object, or a softening of the force of the quality, and also for the agreement of the adjective with the diminutive noun; e. g. *бѣловáтыйя черни́ла*, *whitish ink*; *ры́жесенькая лошáдка*, *a little bay horse*; *мáленькая дѣвочка*, *a little young girl*. The diminutive adjective in the former case ends, in the full termination, in *овáтый* or *евáтый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated in *овáтѣ* or *евáтѣ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), and in the latter case, in the full termination, it ends in *онькíй* and *енькíй* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated, in *онекъ* and *енекъ* (neut. *нько*, fem. *нька*); e. g.

бѣлый, white; *dim.* *бѣловáтый* or *бѣловáтъ*, and *бѣленькíй* or *бѣленекъ*.
тѣплый, hot; . . . *тепловáтый* or *тепловáтъ*, and *тепленькíй* or *тепленекъ*.
сухой, dry; . . . *суховáтый* or *суховáтъ*, and *сұхонькíй* or *сұхонекъ*.
красный, red; . . . *красновáтый* or *-новáтъ*, and *красненькíй* or *-нóнекъ*.
сіній, blue; . . . *синевáтый* or *синевáтъ*, and *сіненькíй* or *синенекъ*.
рыжій, bay; . . . *рыжевáтый* or *рыжевáтъ*, and *рыженькíй* or *рыженекъ*.

The diminutive ending *овáтый*, *евáтый*, must not be confounded with the similar ending of the positive, which belongs to the qualifying adjectives; e. g. *виновáтый*, *culpable*; *угловáтый*, *angular*; *ноздревáтый*, *porous*; *угревáтый*, *scaly*.

5. The *augmentative* degree (увеличительная стéпень) is used in the qualifying adjectives to express the abundance or excess of quality, and is formed in the full termination by the prepositive particle *пре*, and in the apocopated by the endings *ѣхонекъ* and *ѣшенекъ*, or *о́хонекъ* and *о́шенекъ* (neut. *нько*, fem. *нька*); e. g.

бѣлый, white; *augm.* *пребѣлый*, or *бѣлѣхонекъ* and *бѣлѣшенекъ*, quite white.
сухой, dry; . . . *пресухой*, or *сухѣхонекъ* and *сухѣшенекъ*, very dry.
лёгkий, light; . . . *прелёгkий*, or *легѣхонекъ* and *легѣшенекъ*, very light.
мáлый, little; . . . *премáлый*, or *мáлѣхонекъ* and *мáлѣшенекъ*, very little.

The adjective *прекрасный*, *beautiful*, in which the particle *пре* has an augmentative meaning, is used as a simple adjective to be distinguished from *красный*, *red*; but it is not the same case with *прелестный*, *charming*, derived from *прелесть*, *charm*.

39. — The Russian adjectives have three *declensions*; the *first* for adjectives of the *full termination*, the *second* for those of the *apocopated*, and the *third* for those of the *mixed termination*, i. e. for such common possessive adjectives in *и* (neut. *бе*, fem. *бя*), as have some inflections of the full and others of the apocopated termination. Each of these declensions has three endings for three genders, masculine, feminine and neuter, corresponding to the three declensions of substantives, as is seen in the opposite table.

Declension
of adjectives.

In declining adjectives according to this table, attention is required to the following observations:

1. The inflection *ой* of the *nominative* singular masculine, instead of *ый*, or of *ий* preceded by a guttural or a hissing consonant, is only used when the accent is on the last syllable; e. g. *слѣпой*, *blind*; *восковой*, *of wax*; *глухой*, *deaf*; *чужой*, *foreign*; *большой*, *great* (instead of *слѣпый*, *восковый*, *глухий*, *чужий*, *большій*).

2. The inflection *ия* or *ія* of the *genitive* singular feminine is Slavonian, and is only used in poetry, or in religious prose; e. g. *крѣтость святія жизни*, *the sweetness of a holy life*; *Собѣръ Казанскія Божія Матери*, *the Cathedral of Our-Lady of Casan*.

3. The inflection *ой*, *ей* or *ей* of the *instrumental* singular feminine is a contraction of *ою*, *ею* or *ею* in use in familiar language.

4. The inflection *ю*, of the *prepositional* singular masculine and neuter of the II declension, is confined to the names of families and towns, and the inflection *омъ* to the individual possessive adjectives, and to the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination. (See Paradigms 9, 10, 11, 12, 13.)

PARADIGMS OF THE THREE

		SINGULAR					
DECLENSIONS:	TERMINATIONS:	Masculine and neuter genders.					
		Nomin. and Vocative.	Genitive.	Dative.	Accus.	Instr.	Prep.
FIRST.	FULL.	1. { <i>м. нѡвый</i> , new	нѡв-аго	о́му .		нѡмъ	о́мъ .
		н. нѡвое					
		2. { <i>м. мѡгкій</i> , tender	мѡгк-аго	о́му .		мѡмъ	о́мъ .
		н. мѡгкое					
		3. { <i>м. сѡнїй</i> , blue	сѡн-аго	е́му .		сѡмъ	е́мъ .
		н. сѡнее					
		4. { <i>м. свѣжїй</i> , fresh	свѣж-аго	е́му .		свѣмъ	е́мъ .
		н. свѣжее					
SECOND.	APOCOPATED.	5. (<i>Графъ</i>) Толсто́й	Толст-аго	о́му .		тѡмъ	о́мъ .
		6. <i>м. портной</i> , a tailor	портн-аго	о́му .		портѡмъ	о́мъ .
		7. <i>н. жаркое</i> , a roast	жарк-аго	о́му .		жарѡмъ	о́мъ .
		8.					
		9. { <i>м. царевъ</i> , the king's	царев-а	у .		царѡмъ	о́мъ .
		н. царѡ					
		10. { <i>м. бѣлы</i> , white	бѣл-а	у .		бѣмъ	о́мъ .
		н. бѣло					
THIRD.	MIXED.	11. (<i>Князь</i>) Рѣшнѡмъ	Рѣшнѡмъ	у .		рѣшѡмъ	о́мъ .
		12. (<i>городъ</i>) Кашнѡмъ	Кашнѡмъ	у .		кашѡмъ	о́мъ .
		13. (<i>село</i>) Бородинѡмъ	Бородинѡмъ	у .		борѡмъ	о́мъ .
		14.					
		15. { <i>м. Господень</i> , the Lord's	Господѡмъ	у .		госпѡмъ	о́мъ .
		н. Господѡмъ					
		16. { <i>м. синѡ</i> , blue	синѡмъ	у .		синѡмъ	о́мъ .
		н. синѡ					
		17. { <i>м. рыбѡй</i> , of fish	рыбѡмъ	у .		рыбѡмъ	о́мъ .
		н. рыбѡе					

The following observations, relative to the *tonic accent* in the declension of the adjectives, are important:

1. All the inflections of the full and of the mixed termination, i. e. in the 1st and 3rd declension, retain the accentuation of the nominative singular masculine.

2. In the apocopated termination, i. e. in the 2nd declension, the accent is often transferred to the last syllable, sometimes only in the nominative feminine, and at other times in the neuter and in the plural. The oblique cases of the apocopated termination either retain the accentuation of the nominative, or transfer the accent to the last syllable.

DECLENSIONS OF ADJECTIVES.

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.					
Feminine gender.				For the three genders.					
N. and V. G. D. and P. Acc. Instr.				Nom. and Voc.		Gen. and Pr.		Dat. Accus. Instr.	
нов-ая	ой	ую	ою	м. нов-ые . . .	н. ф. нов-ья . . .	ихъ	имъ	имъ	ими
мѣтк-ая	ой	ую	ою	м. мѣтк-іе . . .	н. ф. мѣтк-ія . . .	ихъ	имъ	имъ	ими
сѣн-яя	ей	юю	ею	м. сѣн-іе . . .	н. ф. сѣн-ія . . .	ихъ	имъ	имъ	ими
свѣж-ая	ей	ую	ею	м. свѣж-іе . . .	н. ф. свѣж-ія . . .	ихъ	имъ	имъ	ими
(Графиня)				(Графиня)					
Толст-ая	ой	ую	ою	Толст-ые . . .	портн-іе . . .	ихъ	имъ	имъ	ими
кладов-ая	ой	ую	ою	кладов-ые . . .	жарк-ія . . .	ихъ	имъ	имъ	ими
a storehouse.				кладов-ья . . .		ихъ	имъ	имъ	ими
царѣв-а	ой	у	ою	царѣв-ы		ихъ	имъ	имъ	ими
бѣл-а	ой	у	ою	бѣл-ы		ихъ	имъ	имъ	ими
(Княгиня)				(Князь)					
Решни-а	ой	у	ою	Решни-ы		ихъ	имъ	имъ	ими
(дерева)									
Мѣрин-а	ой	у	ою						
Господн-я	ей	ю	ою	Господн-я		ихъ	имъ	имъ	ими
сен-я	ей	ю	ою	сен-я		ихъ	имъ	имъ	ими
рыб-ья	ей	ю	ою	рыб-ья		ихъ	имъ	имъ	ими

The *accusative masculine*, singular and plural, of the adjectives is like the *nominative*, when the noun, which they qualify, designates an inanimate or abstract object, as is also the case with the substantives; and it is like the *genitive*, when the noun designates an animate being, even when the accusative of the noun in question may not happen to be the same as the genitive, as is the case with the masculine substantives of the 3rd declension; ex. мы любимъ вѣрнаго слугу, we love the faithful servant; мы любимъ вѣрныхъ слугъ, we love the faithful servants.

5. The apocopated termination of the adjectives is often used instead of the full in poetry, for the sake of the rhythm; e. g. *пушисты* ивы (instead of *пушистые*), *thick hoarfrost*; *быстры* воды (instead of *быстрые*), *rapid waters*; *доброу* молодцу (instead of *доброму*), *to the good young man*; *сыру* землю (instead of *сырую*), *the moist earth*.

6. The inflection *е, я, и, э*, &c. of the common possessive adjectives is used in an elevated style, and *е, а, э*, &c. in familiar language.

7. As the *vocative* of the adjectives is always the same as the nominative, it has been omitted in the table of the declensions.

Paradigms
of the de-
clensions of
adjectives.

40. — With due attention to the above remarks all the adjectives of the Russian language can be declined according to the 17 paradigms. (See p. 76 sq.)

First
declension.

According to the 1st paradigm (новый) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *ый*; 2) the common possessive adjectives in *овый, евый, ный, иный*; 3) all the material possessive adjectives; 4) the diminutive adjectives in *оватый* and *еватый*; remarking that the termination *ый* when accented is changed into *ой*. Such are:

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1) <i>Добрый</i> , good, <i>н. доброе, ф. добрая.</i> | <i>Дорожный</i> , of road, <i>дорожное, дорожная.</i> |
| <i>Сильный</i> , vigorous, <i>сильное, сильная</i> | <i>Носовой</i> , of the nose, <i>носовое, носовая</i> |
| <i>Старый</i> , old, <i>старое, старая</i> | 3) <i>Золотой</i> , of gold, <i>золотое, золотая.</i> |
| <i>Черный</i> , black, <i>чёрное, чёрная.</i> | <i>Железный</i> , of iron, <i>железное, железная.</i> |
| <i>Красный</i> , red, <i>красное, красная.</i> | <i>Масляный</i> , of oil, <i>масляное, масляная.</i> |
| <i>Белый</i> , white, <i>белое, белая</i> | <i>Кожаный</i> , of leather, <i>кожаное, кожаная.</i> |
| <i>Умный</i> , wise, <i>умное, умная.</i> | <i>Деревянный</i> , of wood, <i>деревянное, -ая.</i> |
| <i>Грубый</i> , coarse, <i>грубое, грубая.</i> | 4) <i>Беловатый</i> , whitish, <i>беловатое, -ая.</i> |
| <i>Полный</i> , full, <i>полное, полная.</i> | <i>Красноватый</i> , reddish, <i>красноватое, -ая.</i> |
| <i>Нежный</i> , tender, <i>нежное, нежная.</i> | <i>Синеватый</i> , bluish, <i>синеватое, синеватая.</i> |
| <i>Слепой</i> , blind, <i>слепое, слепая.</i> | <i>Рыжеватый</i> , ruddy, <i>рыжеватое, -ая.</i> |
| <i>Простой</i> , simple, <i>простое, простая.</i> | |
| <i>Худой</i> , bad, <i>худое, худая.</i> | |
| <i>Нямой</i> , dumb, <i>нямое, нямая.</i> | |
| 2) <i>Бобровый</i> , of beaver, <i>н. бобровое, ф. -овая.</i> | |
| <i>Ежовый</i> , of hedgehog, <i>ежовое, ежовая.</i> | |
| <i>Пчелиный</i> , of bee, <i>пчелиное, пчелиная.</i> | |

According to the 2nd paradigm (мягкій) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *гій, ній, хій*; 2) the common possessive adjectives in *скій* and *цкій*; 3) the diminutive adjectives in *енькій* and *онькій*; the termination *ій* when accented being also changed into *ой*. Such are: *

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1) Лёгкій, light, <i>н. лёгкое, ф. лёгкая.</i> | Господскій, seigniorial, <i>н. господское, ф. господская</i> |
| Строгій, strict, строгое, строгая. | Русскій, Russian, русское, русская. |
| Кроткій, kind, кроткое, кроткая. | Нѣмецкій, German, нѣмецкое, нѣмецкая |
| Великій, great, великое, великая. | Людскій, men's, людское, людская. |
| Упругій, elastic, упругое, упругая | Городскій, of a town, городское, городская. |
| Горькій, bitter, горькое, горькая | |
| Вѣтхій, old, вѣтхое, вѣтхая. | 3) Маленькій, little, маленькое, -кая |
| Дорогой, dear, дорогое, дорогая. | Бѣленькій, whitish, бѣленькое, бѣленькая |
| Сухой, dry, сухое, сухая | Лѣгонькій, lightish, лѣгонькое, -кая |
| Глухой, deaf, глухое, глухая. | |
| 2) Зѣбскій, bestial, зѣбское, -ская | |
| Жѣнскій, feminine, женское, женская | |

According to the 3rd paradigm (тѣній) are declined the adjectives: 1) qualifying, 2) circumstantial possessive, and 3) some common possessive, in *ній* (neut. *ее*, fem. *яя*); such are:

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1) Древній, ancient, <i>н. древнее, ф. древняя.</i> | Здѣшній, of here, <i>н. здѣшнее, ф. здѣшняя.</i> |
| Ближній, neighbour, ближнее, [ближняя. | Нынѣшній, actual, нынѣшнее, -шняя |
| Дальній, distant, дальнее, дальняя | Зимній, hybernal, зимнее, зимняя. |
| Искренній, sincere, искреннее, искренняя | Весенній, vernal, весеннее, -няя. |
| Игрёній, light-sorrel, игрёнее, игрёная. | Лѣтній, estival, лѣтнее, лѣтняя |
| Порожній, empty, порожнее, порожняя | Осенній, autumnal, осеннее, осенняя |
| Поздній, tardy, позднее, поздняя. | Прѣжній, precedent, прѣжнее, -жняя. |
| Ранній, early, раннее, ранняя | Послѣдній, last, послѣднее, -дняя. |
| 2) Вчерашній, yesterday's, вчерашнее, -шняя. | 3) Мужній, marital, мужнее, мужняя. |
| Вечерній, evening's, вечернее, вечерняя. | Дружній, friend's, дружнее, дружняя |
| Утренній, morning's, утреннее, утренняя. | Сыновній, filial, сыновнее, сыновняя. |

According to the 4th paradigm (свѣжій) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *юій, чій, шій* and *щій* (neut. *ее*, fem. *ая*); 2) all the comparatives and superlatives in the full termination; observing that the ending *ій* when accented is changed into *ой*. Such are:

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1) Дѣлѣй , robust, <i>ж. дѣлѣе, / дѣлая</i> | Чужой , foreign, <i>ж. чужое, / чужая</i> |
| Горѣй , hot, <i>горѣе, горѣчая</i> | Общій , common, <i>общее, общая</i> |
| Кипѣй , boiling, <i>кипѣе, -чая</i> | Нѣщій , poor, <i>нѣще, нѣщая</i> |
| Хорѣй , good, <i>хорѣе, хорѣшая</i> | 2) Бѣльшій , greater, <i>бѣльшее, бѣльшая</i> |
| Бѣльшій , great, <i>бѣльшѣе, бѣльшая</i> | Лѣчшій , better, <i>лѣчшее, лѣчшая</i> |
| Похѣй , resembling, <i>похѣе, -жая</i> | Мѣньшій , least, <i>мѣньшее, мѣньшая</i> |
| Пригѣй , pretty, <i>пригѣе, пригѣя</i> | Нѣжнѣйшій , more tender, <i>-ѣйшее, -ѣйшая</i> |

According to the 5th paradigm (Толстой) are declined family names in *ий* and *ій*, or in *ой* with the accent (fem. *а*); the vowel *ы* being changed into *и* after a guttural. Such are:

- | | |
|--|---|
| Смирной , Smirnoi, <i>/ Смирная</i> | Трубецкой , Troobetzkoj, <i>/ Трубецкая</i> |
| Полевой , Poluvoi, <i>Полевая</i> | Завадовскій , Zavadovski, <i>Завадовская</i> |
| Нарѣжнѣй , Naraizhni, <i>Нарѣжная</i> | Жуковскій , Zhookovski, <i>Жуковская</i> |
| Браницкій , Branitzki, <i>Браницкая</i> | Мещерскій , Mestcherski, <i>Мещерская</i> |
| Вобринскій , Bobrinski, <i>Вобринская</i> | |
| Долгоруцкій , Dolgorooki, <i>Долгорукая</i> | |

Such family names as are formed from the genitive, as: Мертваго, *Mertvaho*; Паренаго, *Parenaho*; Сухихъ, *Sookhiikh*, Нагихъ, *Naghiikh*, are indeclinable.

According to the 6th, 7th and 8th paradigm (портной, жаркое, кладовая) are declined some masculine neuter and feminine nouns, which are in fact only adjectives used as substantives, remembering to change *о* into *е* and *ы* into *и* after a guttural or a hissing consonant. Such are:

- | | |
|--------------------------------|--|
| 1) Выборный , a deputy. | 2) Животное , an animal. |
| Востовой , a messenger. | Мороженое , ice-creams. |
| Кормчий , the pilot | Насѣкомое , an insect. |
| Часовой , a sentry. | 3) Вселенная , the universe. |
| Мастеровой , an artisan | Гостинная , a drawing-room. |
| Подъѣзжій , a clerk. | Набережная , a quay. |
| Прохожій , a passenger. | Чертежная , room for the drawers. |
| Пѣвчій , a chanter. | Перѣдняя , an antechamber. |

Second declension.

According to the 9th paradigm (царевъ) are declined the individual possessive adjectives in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ*, *ынъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*). Such are:

- | | |
|---|--|
| Сынѣвъ , son's, <i>ж. сынѣво, / сынѣва</i> | Христѣвъ , Christ's, <i>ж. Христѣво, / Христѣва</i> |
| Петровъ , Peter's, <i>Петрово, Петрова</i> | Материнъ , mother's, <i>материнѣ, -рина</i> |
| Отцевъ , father's, <i>отцево, отцева</i> | Дѣтеринъ , daughter's, <i>дѣтеринѣ, дѣтерина</i> |
| Герѣвъ , hero's, <i>герѣво, герѣва</i> | |
| Павловъ , Paul's, <i>Павлово, Павлова</i> | |

Никѣтинъ, Nicetas's, *н. Никѣтино*, *ф. Царѣцынъ*, the queen's, *н. царѣцѣно*,
Никѣтина. *ф. -цына* [*-цына*
Ильѣнъ, Elias's, *Ильѣно*. **Ильѣна**. *Дѣвицынъ*, the girl's, *дѣвицѣно*,

The adjective **Христовъ** takes in the prepositional singular the inflection *ѣ* (instead of *омъ*) in the phrase: *по Рождествѣ Христовѣ* (instead of *Христовомѣ*), after the *Birth of Christ*.

According to the 10th paradigm (*бѣлъ*) are declined the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination in *ѣ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), with the exception of those in *мѣ*, *чѣ*, *шѣ* and *щѣ*, which belong to the 16th paradigm, remembering to change *ѣ* into *ѣ* after the gutturals (*з*, *к*, *х*), and remarking that the tonic accent, which remains on the same syllable in all the inflections of the full termination, is often transferred, in the apocopated, to the last syllable, sometimes in the feminine only, and at other times also in the neuter and plural. Such are:

Радъ , joyous, <i>н. радо</i> , <i>ф. рада</i> ; <i>рѣ</i>	Высокъ , high, <i>н. высоко</i> , <i>ф. высока</i> ;
рады	<i>рѣ. высокі</i>
Гораздъ , expert, -до, -да; <i>горазды</i>	Силенъ , vigorous, <i>сильно</i> , <i>сильна</i> ;
Новъ , new, ново, нова; <i>новы</i>	<i>сильны</i>
Слабъ , weak, слабо, слаба; <i>слабы</i>	Уменъ , wise, умно, умна; <i>умны</i>
Цѣлъ , entire, цѣло, цѣла; <i>цѣлы</i>	Тепелъ , hot, тепло, тепла; <i>теплы</i>
Велѣкъ , great, велико, велика; <i>велики</i>	Легокъ , light, легко, легка; <i>легки</i>
Сухъ , dry, сѣхо, суха; <i>сѣхи</i>	Добръ , good, добро, добра; <i>добры</i>
Крѣпокъ , strong, крѣпко, крѣпка; <i>крѣпки</i>	Желтъ , yellow, желто, желта; <i>желты</i> .
	Боленъ , sick, больно, больна; <i>больны</i> .

According to the 11th paradigm (*Репнинъ*) are declined family names in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ* and *ѣнъ* (fem. *а*), which take in the prepositional singular masculine the inflection *ѣ* (instead of *омъ*). Such are:

Суворовъ , Soovorof, <i>ф. Суворова</i>	Дмитріевъ , Dmitrief, <i>ф. Дмитріева</i>
Кутузовъ , Kootoosof, <i>Кутузова</i>	Гурьевъ , Goorief, <i>Гурьева</i>
Ломоносовъ , Lomonossof, <i>Ломоносова</i> .	Васильевъ , Vassilief, <i>Васильева</i>
Строгановъ , Stroganof, <i>Строганова</i>	Державинъ , Derzhavin, <i>Державина</i> .
Крыловъ , Krylof, <i>Крылова</i>	Карамзинъ , Karamzin, <i>Карамзина</i>
Шлишковъ , Shishkof, <i>Шлиškova</i> .	Княжнинъ , Kniazhnin, <i>Княжнина</i>
Херасковъ , Kheraskof, <i>Хераскова</i>	Пушкинъ , Pooshkin, <i>Пушкина</i>
Орловъ , Orlof, <i>Орлова</i>	Потѣкинъ , Potiomkin, <i>Потѣкина</i> .
	Голлицынъ , Golitzin, <i>Голлицына</i>

Foreign family names, such as: **Базедовъ**, *Basedow*; **Канкринъ**, *Cancrin*, are declined like the substantives, and, having no feminine, are indeclinable when referring to females. The same

remark applies equally to Russian family names ending in *вичъ*; but sometimes in feminine they take the termination *вичева*, which then is declined as an adjective; e. g. у Графини Кан-кричъ, at the Countess Cancrin; у Госпожи Максимовичъ or Максимовичевой, at Madame Maximovitch.

According to the 12th, 13th and 14th paradigms (Кáшинъ, Бородинó, Мýрина) are declined such names of towns, boroughs and villages, as end in the masculine in *овъ, евъ, инъ, ынъ*; in the neuter in *ово, ево, ино, ыно*, and in the feminine in *ова, ева, ина, ына*, which take also in the *prepositional* singular masculine and neuter the inflection *ь* (instead of *омъ*). Such are:

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1) (<i>городъ</i>) Борíсовъ, Borissof. | Царíцyno, Tzaritzino. |
| Могилевъ, Mohilef | Останкинó, Ostankino. |
| Алѣксинъ, Alexin. | 3) (<i>деревня</i>) Пáрголова, Pargolova. |
| Козлóвъ, Kozlof. | Краскóва, Kraskova. |
| 2) (<i>селó</i>) Тарúтинó, Tarootino | Леташева, Letachova. |
| Измáйлово, Izmailovo | Валúжна, Valoonna. |

Exceptions to this rule are the names of the following towns: Кíевъ, *Kíef*; Псковъ, *Pleskow*; Харьковъ, *Charkof*; Гдовъ, *Gdof*; Ростóвъ, *Rostof*; Орловъ, *Orlof*; as also the names of foreign towns, e. g. Берлинъ, *Berlin*, which are declined like substantives, having in the *instrumental* singular the inflection *омъ* (and not *ымъ*). The same is the case with the names of towns in *скъ, цкъ* and *ь*; as: Смолѣнскъ, *Smolensk*; Полоцкъ, *Polotsk*; Ярославъ, *Yaroslavl*, &c.

In such names of towns as are formed of *новъ* and *бѣло*, as: Нóвгородъ, *Neugorod*; Бѣлоóзеро, *Bieloosero*, both the adjective and substantive are declined: *G.* Новагóрода, Бѣлаóзера; *D.* Новугóроду, Бѣлуóзеру; *I.* Новымъ-гóродомъ, Бѣлымъ-óзеромъ; *P.* о Новъгóродъ, Бѣлóзеръ (taking also the inflection *ь* instead of *омъ*).

According to the 15th paradigm (Госпóдень) is declined the individual possessive adjective:

Бóжiй, of God, *н.* Бóжiе, *ж.* Бóжiа, *м.* Бóжiи,

which must not be confounded with the common possessive adjective бóжескiй, *divine, relating to the attributes of God*. The adjective Бóжiй takes also the inflections of mixed termination, as in Бóжье дѣрево, *southern wood* (a plant); Бóжья корóвка, *cochineal, the lady-bird*; *G.* Бóжьего дѣрева, Бóжьей корóвки, *D.* Бóжьему дѣреву, &c.

According to the 16th paradigm (синь) are declined *the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination ending in *o* or *z* (neut. *e*, fem. *a*), and also those in *омъ, чъ, шъ, щъ* (neut. *e*, fem. *a*), remembering to change *a* into *o* and *ю* into *у* after the hissings (ж, ч, ш, щ). Such are:

Дре́вень, ancient. <i>a</i> дре́вне, <i>f</i> дре́вня	Свѣжъ, fresh, <i>a</i> свѣже, <i>f</i> свѣжа
И́скренень, sincere, и́скренне, -ення	Рыжъ, caroty, рыже, рыжа
Поро́женъ, empty, поро́жне, поро́жня	Горя́чъ, burning, горячо, горяча
Дюжъ, robust, дюжо, дюжа	Хоро́шъ, good, хорошо, хороша
Похо́жъ, semblable, похоже, похожа	Тошъ, fasting, тоще, тоща

According to the 17th paradigm (рыбий) are declined the common possessive adjectives in *ий, овий, еий* (neut. *о*, fem. *я*), which are formed from the specific names of animals; e. g. Third declension.

Оле́ний, of deer, <i>a</i> оле́нье, <i>f</i> оле́нья	Пти́чий, of bird, <i>a</i> пти́чье, <i>f</i> пти́чья
Собо́лий, of sable, собо́лье, собо́лья	Пяту́ший, of cock, пята́нье, пята́нья
Ко́зий, of goat, ко́зье, ко́зья	Верблю́жий, of camel, верблю́жье, верблю́жья
Коро́вий, of cow, коро́вье, коро́вья	Лебя́жий, of swan, лебя́жье, лебя́жья
Ове́чий, of sheep, ове́чье, ове́чья	Воло́вий, of ox, воло́вье, воло́вья
Медве́жий, of bear, медве́жье, медве́жья	Конё́вий, of horse, конё́вье, конё́вья
Бара́ний, of ram, бара́нье, бара́нья	Му́ший, of fly, му́шье, му́шья
Гова́жий, of ox, гова́жье, гова́жья	Теля́чий, of calf, теля́чье, теля́чья
Слоно́вий, of elephant, слоно́вье, -ья	Клопо́вий, of bug, клопо́вье, клопо́вья
Сомо́вий, of silurus, сомо́вье, сомо́вья	Волчи́й, of wolf, волчи́е, волчи́я
Лисьи́, of fox, лисье, лисья	Челове́чий, of man, челове́чье, -ья

The possessive adjective *человѣчій* is used when applied to man as an animal, and the adjective *человѣческий* (*n. ое, f. ая*) to man as an intelligent being.

EXERCISES ON THE ADJECTIVES.

It is necessary to observe preliminarily that according to the rules of construction in the Russian language the adjective is usually placed before the substantive, when it does not form the attribute of the proposition; and that the verb *to be* is commonly understood in the present.

An empty pocket; the pocket is empty. A strong castle; Apocope of the termination.
 Пусто́й карма́нь; (есть) . Крѣпкі́й за́мокъ;
 the castle is strong. A faithful servant; the servant has been
 . Вѣрный слуга́; былъ

faithful. The soft wax; the wax is soft. A quiet sleep; the
 . МЯГКІЙ воскъ; . СПОКОЙНЫЙ сонъ;

sleep is quiet. A worthy son; the son is worthy. A true
 . ДОСТОЙНЫЙ сынъ; . ИСТИННЫЙ

friend; the friend is true. Perfect repose; the repose
 другъ; . Совершенный покой;

will be perfect. A transparent glass; the glass is transparent.
 будетъ . Прозрачный стеклѣ;

An ancient tradition; the tradition was ancient. A hot summer;
 Древній преданіе; было . Тёплый лѣто;

the summer will be hot. A blunt pen; the pen is blunt.
 будетъ . Тупой перѣ;

An old hut; the hut is old. A blue paper; the paper is
 Вѣтхій хижина; . Синій бумага;

blue. New houses; the houses are new. Rich families;
 . Новый домъ; (суть) . Богатый семья;

the families were rich. Red ensigns; the ensigns will be red.
 были . Красный знамя; будутъ .

Degrees of White paper; whiter paper; the whitest paper. The Neva
 signification Бѣлый бумага; . Невѣ

is rapid, and the Volga is more rapid. The milk is
 (есть) быстрый, а Волга . Молоко

liquid, and the water is more liquid. A deep brook; a deeper
 жидкій, а вода . Глубокій ручей;

river. The houses are high, and the towers are higher.
 рѣка. Домъ (суть) высокій, а башня .

Good tea; better tea; the best tea. The dogs are little;
 Хорошій чай; . Собака малый;

the cats are less; but the mice are the least. The father is
 кошка ; но мышь f . Отецъ

young; the mother is younger; but the sister is the youngest.
 молодѣй: мать f . но сестра .

The hay is dear, and the straw is dearer. Milk is sweet;
Сѣно дорогѣй, а солома . Молоко сладкій;

sugar is sweeter; but honey is the sweetest of all.

сахаръ ; но мѣдъ .

Some whitish paper; some reddish ink; some blackish
Бѣлый бумага; бѣлый чернила *pl*; чѣрный

water; the colour is bluish. A little red cow; a little pony;
вода; краска (*есть*) синій. Бѣлый коровка; малый лошадка;

a little piebald horse; a poor little girl; the grey-headed
, пѣгій лошадка; бѣдный дѣвочка; старичекъ

man is very old; the little old woman is very good. Very white
(*есть*) старій; старушка добрый. Бѣлый

paper; the paper is very white; very dry wood; the wood
бумага; . . . ; сухой дрова *pl*;

is very dry.

The master of the large gardens, and the mistress of the new Declension of the full termination.
Хозяинъ обширный садъ, и хозяйка новыи

house. A glass of good water and of red wine; whole
домъ. Стаканъ хорощій вода и красныи вино; чѣлыи

pots of pork-fat and of fir-resin. Do good
горшокъ свиной сало и еловый смола. Дѣлай (*acc.*) добро

to poor children and to infirm old men, and do not go
бѣдный дитя и дряхлыи старикъ, и не ходи

into the fields of others. This is the house of the Prince
по (*dat.*) поле чужой. Вотъ (*nom.*) домъ Князь

Dolgoruki, that is the palace of the Countess Tolstoi, and
Долгорукій, вотъ дворецъ Графиня Толстой, а

there are the large gardens of the young Counts Zavadovski.
вотъ обширный садъ молодой Графъ Завадовскій.

I have admired the agreeable song of the nightingale of last year.
Я дивился (*dat.*) пріятныи пѣніе соловей прошлогодній.

To cut a swan's quill with a blunt penknife. There are
 Чинить (acc.) лебединый перо тупой ножи́къ. Вотъ (nom.)

some goose quills, some red stayons, some thick blank books,
 гусиный перо, краси́ый карандашъ, толстый тетрадь f,

some oak-rulers, and great mathematical compasses, and here
 дубо́вый линѣйка, и большо́й циркуль m, а вотъ

are some woollen clothes, some silk stockings, some beaver hats,
 суконный кафтанъ, шелковый чулокъ, пуховый шляпа,

fine linen, and still finer lace. Love good
 то́нкий полотно и тончайшій кружево. Люби́ (acc.) непрочный

morals; read useful books; honour old people;
 нравъ; чита́й (acc.) полезный книга; чт́ (acc.) ста́рый* люди pl:

praise good actions; keep the honest and faithful
 хвали́ (acc.) добрый дѣло; береги́ (acc.) чѣстный и вѣрный

servant. Give the new book to the most attentive
 слуга́. Подари́ (acc.) но́вый книга (dat.) са́мый приле́жный

scholar. You praise the weather of spring, the splendour
 учени́къ. Ты хвали́шь (acc.) по́года весѣнный, ясность f

of the summer nights, the coolness of autumn, and the colds
 лѣтний ночь f, прохла́да о́сенний и холо́дъ

of winter. I esteem the celebrated men, and the illustrious
 зи́мний. Я уважа́ю (acc.) сла́вный мужъ и знамени́тый

commanders of ancient times. The great military manœuvres of
 полково́децъ дре́вний вре́мя. Большо́й манёвр въ (prep.)

this year will take place at Kransnoe Selo, and on the
 ны́нѣшний годъ бу́дутъ въ (prep.) Краси́ое Село́ и на (prep.)

mountain of Douderhof.

Гора́ Ду́дергофскій.

Declension
 of the apo-
 copated ter-
 mination.

He has left the house of his father, and he does
 Онъ вы́тхалъ изъ (gen.) домо́ отце́въ, и дѣла́етъ (acc.)

good to the daughter of his sister. He has sold the property
 добро́ (dat.) дочѣ f сестринѣ. Онъ про́далъ (acc.) имѣ́ние

of his wife to the son of his brother. To visit the temples of
 женинъ (*dat.*) сынъ братинъ. Посѣщать (*acc.*) храмъ
 the Lord and the churches of God. To resign one's self to
 Господень и церковь Божій. Повиноваться (*dat.*)
 the will of the Lord, and to acknowledge the majesty of the
 воля Господень, и познавать (*acc.*) величество

name of God. The first Russian Grammar was written by
 имя Божій. Первый Русскій Грамматика была написана (*instr.*)
 the immortal Lomonossof, and the History of Russia by
 бессмертный Ломоносовъ, и Исторія Россійскій (*instr.*)

Nicholas Mikhailovitsch Karamzin. The battles against the
 Николаѣ Михайловичъ Карамзинъ. Сраженіе съ (*instr.*)

French were fought near Borodino and Borissof.
 Французъ происходили подъ (*instr.*) Бородино и подъ Борисовъ.

I have lived at Novgorod and at Bieloozero. The villages
 Я живалъ въ (*prep.*) Новгородъ и въ Белоозеро. Деревня

of the Princess Saltykof are situated near the town of Kashin.

Княгиня Салтыковъ лежатъ подъ (*instr.*) городъ Кашинъ.

There is a cloak of fox-skin, a sable- cap, a bird- nest, Declension of the mixed termination
 Вотъ (*nom.*) шуба лисій, соболій шапка, птичій гнѣздъ,

some hare- skins, and some elephant's teeth. A pound of deer-
 заячій мехъ и слоновій зубъ. Пудъ оленинъ

flesh, a yard of ox- skin, and a pound of calf's brains. Do
 мясо, аршинъ воловій кожа, и фунтъ телячій мозгъ. Не

not go on the track of a wolf, and do not enter into the den
 ходи по (*dat.*) слѣдъ волчій, и не входи въ (*acc.*) берлогу

of the bear. A dissertation on the man's eye, and on the
 медвѣжій. Разсужденіе о (*prep.*) человѣчій глазъ, и о

fish- head. He deals in isinglass, in ox- fat,
 рыбій головъ. Онъ торгуетъ (*instr.*) рыбій клей, бычачій сало,

in goats' skins, and in cocks' combs.

козій шкура, и петушій гребень и.

Declension
of various
adjectives

The braggart is like the jay, adorned with
Хвасту́нь (есть) похо́жий на (acc.) со́я, укра́шенный (instr.)

peacocks' feathers. The brother of the neighbour has arrived from
павли́ний перо́. Братъ сосѣдовъ при́халъ изъ (gen.)

a distant town, and the sister from a more distant village.
да́льний городъ, а сестра́ изъ да́льний деревня.

John's coat is small, but that of Peter is still
Ива́новъ пла́тье (есть) у́зкій, но (пла́тье) Петро́въ (есть) ещё

smaller. The good little old woman lives in a damp
у́зкій. До́брый стару́шка живётъ въ (prep.) сыро́й

house, situated near the village Tzaritzino. I have bought a
домъ, лежа́щій подъ (instr.) село́ Царицыно. Я купи́лъ (acc.)

cloak of bear-skin with a collar of beaver-skin and a
шу́ба медвѣ́жий съ (instr.) воротникъ бобра́вый, и

cap of beaver-skin with a silk-ribbon. There is a handsome
ша́пка бобра́вый съ шелко́вый лента. Вотъ (nom.) прекра́сный

book with a rich binding of morocco. Where shall we
кни́га въ (prep.) бога́тый пере́плетъ са́фьянный. Гдѣ мы

find an instance of purer self-denial, of more exalted
на́йдемъ примѣръ чистый самоотверже́ніе, высо́кій

love for the native land?

любо́вь къ (dat.) оте́чество?

THE NUMERALS.

Division of
numerals.

41. — The *numerals* (числительныя имена) are of two kinds: 1) the *cardinal* numerals (количественныя), which express the number; and 2) the *ordinal* numerals (порядочныя), which indicate order or rank, and are formed (with exception of *первый*) from the cardinals, as is seen below.

CARDINAL NUMERALS.

ORDINAL NUMERALS.

CARDINAL NUMERALS.	ORDINAL NUMERALS.
1. одинъ, <i>м.</i> одно́, <i>ж.</i> одна́ (<i>сл.</i> <i>оди́къ, ѱно, ѱна</i>)	пѣрвы́й, <i>м.</i> пѣрвое, <i>ж.</i> пѣрвая, first.
2. два, <i>ж.</i> двѣ	второ́й, о́е, а́я, second.
3. три	трѣ́тій, тѣе, тѣя, third.
4. четы́ре	четы́ртый, ое, ая, fourth.
5. пять	пѣ́тый, ое, ая, fifth.
6. шесть	шесто́й, о́е, а́я, sixth.
7. семь (<i>сл.</i> <i>седьмо́</i>)	седьмо́й, о́е, а́я, seventh.
8. во́семь (<i>сл.</i> <i>осьмо́</i>)	осьмо́й, о́е, а́я, eighth.
9. де́вять	девя́тый, ое, ая, ninth.
10. де́сять	деся́тый, ое, ая, tenth.
11. одинна́дцать	одинна́дцатый <i>or</i> пѣрвы́й на- деся́ть 11th.
12. двѣ́ннадцать (<i>сл.</i> <i>дванѣ́дцать</i>)	двѣ́ннадцатый <i>or</i> второ́й на- деся́ть, 12th.
13. тринѣ́дцать	тринѣ́дцатый <i>or</i> трѣ́тій на- деся́ть, 13th.
14. четы́рнадцать	четы́рнадцатый <i>or</i> четы́ртый на-деся́ть, 14th.
15. пятна́дцать	пятна́дцатый <i>or</i> пѣ́тый на-де- ся́ть, 15th.
16. шестна́дцать	шестна́дцатый <i>or</i> шесто́й на- деся́ть, 16th.
17. семна́дцать	семна́дцатый <i>or</i> седьмо́й на- деся́ть, 17th.
18. осьмна́дцать <i>or</i> восемна́д- цать	осьмна́дцатый <i>or</i> осьмо́й на- деся́ть, 18th.
19. девятна́дцать	девятна́дцатый <i>or</i> девя́тый на- деся́ть, 19th.
20. два́дцать (<i>сл.</i> <i>два́дцать</i>)	два́дцатый (<i>сл.</i> <i>двадеся́тый</i>), ое, ая, 20th.
21. два́дцать одинъ	два́дцать пѣрвы́й, 21st.
22. два́дцать два	два́дцать второ́й, 22d.
30. три́дцать	три́дцатый, ое, ая, 30th.
40. со́рокъ (<i>сл.</i> <i>четы́редцать</i>).	сороко́вый (<i>сл.</i> <i>четы́редцать</i>), о́е, а́я, 40th.
50. пятьдеся́ть	пятидеся́тый, ое, ая, 50th.

60. шестьдесятъ	шестидесятый, ое, ая, 60th.
70. семьдесятъ	семидесятый, ое, ая, 70th.
80. восемьдесятъ	осмидесятый, ое, ая, 80th.
90. девяносто (<i>sl. девять-десять</i>)	девяностый (<i>sl. девяностидесятый</i>) 90th.
100. сто	сотый, ое, ая, hundredth.
200. двѣсти	двухъ-сотый, ое, ая, 200th.
300. триста	трѣхъ-сотый, ое, ая, 300th.
400. четыреста	четырёхъ-сотый, ое, ая, 400th.
500. пятьсотъ	пятисотый, ое, ая, 500th.
600. шестьсотъ	шестисотый, ое, ая, 600th.
700. семьсотъ	семисотый, ое, ая, 700th.
800. восемьсотъ	осмисотый, ое, ая, 800th.
900. девятьсотъ	девятисотый, ое, ая, 900th.
1000. тысяча (<i>sl. тысяща</i>)	тысячный, ое, ая, thousandth.
2000. двѣ тысячи	двухъ-тысячный, ое, ая, two thousandth.
10,000. десять тысячъ (<i>sl. тѣа</i>).	десятитысячный, ое, ая, ten thousandth.
100,000. сто тысячъ	стотысячный, ое, ая, 100-thousandth.
1,000,000. миллионъ	миллионный, ое, ая, millionth.
2,000,000. два миллиона	двухъ-миллионный, ое, ая, two milliophth.
1,000,000,000. тысяча миллионовъ	тысячемиллионный, ое, ая, 1000-millionth.
1,000,000,000,000. биллионъ	биллионный, ое, ая, billionth.

To the cardinal numerals belong the *fractional* (дрѣбныя) numerals, such as: половѣна, *the half*; треть, *the third*; чѣтверть, *the fourth*; осьмѣха, *the eighth*; полторá, *one and a half*; полтретья, *two and a half*; полчетвертá, *three and a half*, &c.; and to the ordinal numerals belong also the circumstantial adjectives другóй, *other*, and послѣднѣй, *last*: другóй being used instead of вторóй, *second*, and послѣднѣй being opposed to пѣрвый, *first*.

From the cardinal numerals *два, три, &c.* as far as *десять*, as also from *сто*, are formed the *collective* (собира́тельные) numerals: *дво́е, трое́, четы́веро, пя́теро, &c., деся́теро, со́теро*. The following words also belong to the collective numerals: *оба́* (*f. обо́ѣ*), *both*; *дво́йка, two*; *тро́йка, three*; *пята́къ, five*; *деся́токъ, ten*; *дю́жина, a dozen*; *со́тня, a hundred*.

The numerals *оди́нъ* and *пе́рвый* are also used as qualifying adjectives, and in that case take some inflections peculiar to adjectives. *Оди́нъ* takes the augmentative termination *оди́нѣхонекъ* and *оди́нѣшенекъ*; and *пе́рвый* takes the diminutive termination *пе́рвенькій*, as also the inflection of the superlative *пе́рвѣйшій* or *са́мый пе́рвый*.

42. — As regards declension, the numerals may be considered as substantive and adjective. The *substantive* numerals are: *со́рокъ, сто, девяно́сто, ты́сяча, миллио́нъ, полови́на, треть f., пята́къ, деся́токъ, дю́жина, &c.* The gender of these, as also their declension, is indicated by their termination. All the ordinal numbers, and the cardinal *оди́нъ*, are numerals adjective. All the other numerals are sometimes adjective, requiring the same case as the nouns to which they are joined, and sometimes substantive, in which occasion they require the noun to which they belong to be put in the genitive case, as will be seen later. Some of the last mentioned have the inflections of nouns, while others have inflections peculiar to themselves. A general view of the declension of the numerals may be obtained from the following table.

Declension
of the
numerals

According to the 6th and 7th paradigms (двое and четверо) are declined the similar collective numerals; viz:

6th par.) Трое and трои, three.	Шестеро and шестеры, six
Овое and овои, two.	Десятеро and десятеры, ten
7th par.) Пятеро and пятеры, five.	Сотеро and сотеры, hundred.

Двое, трое, четверо, &c., are used with the names of animate beings of the masculine and neuter gender; and двои, трои, четверы, &c., with the names of inanimate and abstract objects which only occur in the plural; e. g. двое слугъ, *two servants*; трои часы, *three watches*. We may still observe that овое had formerly a singular, the genitive, обоего, of which is still found in the expression: жители обоего пола, *the natives of both sexes*.

According to the 8th and 10th paradigms (пять and пятьдесятъ) are declined the similar numbers following, with the exception of восемь, which is declined by the 9th paradigm; e. g.

8th par.) Шесть, six, <i>gen.</i> шести	Тридцать, thirty, <i>gen.</i> тридцати
Семь, seven, <i>сечи</i>	[десяти]
Девять, nine, <i>девяти</i>	10th par.) Шестьдесятъ, sixty, <i>шести-</i>
Десять, ten, <i>десяти</i>	Семьдесятъ, seventy, <i>семи-</i>
Одиннадцать, eleven, <i>один-</i>	десяти
надцати	Восемьдесятъ, eighty,
Двадцать, twenty, <i>двадцати</i>	осьмидесяти

The first member *восемь* of the last word is declined according to the 9th paradigm: *gen.* осьмидесяти, *instr.* восемью-десятью or осьмидесятью.

According to the 11th and 12th paradigms (двести and пятьсотъ) are declined the following numerals; viz:

11th par.) Триста, three hundred, <i>gen.</i>	Семьсотъ, 700, <i>gen.</i> семи
трехъ сотъ [сотъ]	сотъ
Четыреста, 400, <i>четырехъ</i>	Восемьсотъ, 800, <i>осьми сотъ</i>
12th par.) Шестьсотъ, 600, <i>шести сотъ</i>	Девятьсотъ, 900, <i>деяти сотъ</i>

Двести (instead of *дваста*) is the Slavonic dual of сто, and was used with два and оба, as we shall see later.

According to the 13th paradigm (полтора) are declined such numerals as are formed of полъ, *the half*, with the apocopated genitive of the ordinal number, with the exception of полтретья, which is declined according to the 14th paradigm: e. g.

Получетверта́, three and a half, <i>gen.</i> полу́четверта; <i>fern.</i> полчетверты́.		
Полпята́, four and a half, . . . полу́пята; . . . полпаты́.		
Полшестá, five and a half, . . . полу́шеста; . . . полшесты́		
Полдесята́, nine and a half, . . . полу́десята; . . . полдесяты́		

The compound numeral **полторáста**, *a hundred and fifty* (*a hundred and a half*) forms **полу́тораста** in all the oblique cases. All these words, however, with the exception of **полтора́** and **полтора́ста**, are antiquated, and no longer used.

According to the 15th and 16th paradigms (**по́лдень** and **по́лгода**) are declined such nouns as are formed with the numeral **по́ль**, *the half*; e. g.

15th p.) По́лночь, midnight, <i>gen.</i> полу́-	Полслова́, half a word, <i>gen.</i> полуслова́
ночи [часá]	Полмину́ты, half a minute, полу-
16th p.) Полчасá, half an hour, полу-	мину́ты
По́лдень, half a day, полу́дня	Полверсты́, half a verst, полуверсты́
Полве́дра, half a pail, полу-	Поллу́нта, half a pound, полу-
ве́дра	лу́нта

We must remark that the numeral **по́ль** is joined to substantives in the genitive singular, to indicate *a half*, with the exception of **по́лдень** and **по́лночь**, which signify the *middle of the day* or *of the night*, *midday* or *midnight*. All these nouns are declined by joining **полу́** to the other cases of the simple substantive. We have still to add that **по́лдень** takes in the prepositional with **по** the inflection **и** (instead of **ю**); thus we say: **по полу́дни**, *after noon*. Such nouns as have **полу́** in the nominative singular, as **полуо́стровъ**, *a peninsula*; **полумѣсяцъ**, *a crescent*, are declined like simple substantives.

In the compound cardinal numerals, such as: **два́дцать два**, *twenty two*; **три́дцать пять**, *thirty five*; **сто шесть**, *a hundred and six*, each number is declined separately; *G.* **двадцати́ двухъ**, **тридцати́ пяти́**, **ста́ шести́**, &c. But when they form ordinal numerals, such as: **два́дцать пе́рвый**, *twenty first*; **сто второ́й**, *hundred and second*, the ordinal number only is declined, and the cardinal numerals remain indeclinable; *G.* **два́дцать пе́рваго**, **сто второ́го**. The same is the case with **на́десять**, in the compound numbers; e. g. **пе́рвый-на́десять**, *eleventh*; **второ́й-на́десять**, *twelfth*, where the first part, **пе́рвый**, **второ́й**, is alone declined.

The other numerals follow the declension of the nouns or adjectives to which by their termination they belong. Thus

сорокъ, *forty*; миллионъ, *million*; десятокъ, *ten*, follow the first declensions of substantives (§ 30, *gen.* сорока́, миллио́на, де́сятка); сто, *a hundred*, and девяно́сто, *ninety*, follow the second; while дюжи́на, *a dozen*; со́тня, *a hundred*; тыся́ча, *a thousand* (*instr. sing.* тыся́чею and тыся́чью) are declined according to the third. On this subject we must observe that the numerals *сорокъ*, *сто* and *девяно́сто* only follow the declension of the substantives when they are used as nouns to express *forties*, *hundreds* and *nineties*, and then *сорокъ* and *сто* have also a plural (сороки́, сороко́въ; ста, сотъ, &c.); but when they are joined to a substantive, or to another numeral, they take in the *dative* and *instrumental* cases singular the inflection of the genitive (сорока́, ста, девяно́ста), and sometimes even in the *prepositional*, especially with another numeral.

The ordinal numerals, which are all adjectives, terminating in *ый*, or *ой* (*neut. ое, fem. ая*), are declined according to the full termination of the adjectives, with the exception of *трётий* (*м. третье, f. третья*), *third*, which is declined according to the mixed termination (§ 40).

The numerals *два, оба, три, четыре, двѣ, трѣе, четыре*, have the accusative like the nominative, when they are with the names of inanimate and abstract objects, and like the genitive, when with the names of animate beings. But all the rest: *пять, шесть, семь, двѣдцать*, &c. have always the accusative like the nominative; the same is the case with the numbers *два, три, четыре*, when joined to tens, hundreds or thousands; as *двѣдцать два, twenty two*; *сто три, a hundred and three*, &c., even when referring to animate objects; e. g. *собрать двѣдцать два воина* (and not *двѣдцать двухъ воиновъ*), *to unite twenty two warriors*.

43. — The cardinal numerals, in Russian, when joined with substantives follow various rules unlike those of any other language. These rules are as follows:

1. *Оди́нъ* agrees with its substantive in gender, number and case, and in the compound numerals, such as, *двѣдцать оди́нъ, сто оди́нъ*, the substantive is always put in the singular.

Special rules
of the
numerals.

2. The numerals *два, оба, три, четыре* (and their compounds as *двадцать два, сто четыре, &c.*), *полтора, полтретья*, and others of the same kind, when employed in the nominative or accusative, require the noun to which they belong, to be put in the *genitive singular*, observing that *два, оба, полтора, полтретья*, agree in *gender* with the noun. If there is an adjective, it takes the gender of the substantive and is put in the *nominative plural*.—With all the other numerals, from *пять*, as also with *двое, трое, четверо, пятеро, &c.*, the substantive is put in the *genitive plural*, and if there be an adjective, it agrees with the noun or with the numeral, according to the sense of the phrase. Thus we say: *первые два большие стола, the two first large tables*; and *сui пять больших столовъ, these five large tables*.

This *genitive singular*, which occurs with the numerals *два, три, четыре*, is simply the Slavonic *dual*, which was used with *два* and *оба*, and which has also been retained in *двѣсти* (*sl. двѣтъ*). The numerals *три* and *четыре* were simple adjectives, agreeing with their substantive, while *пять* and the numerals following were considered as collective nouns, always requiring the *genitive plural* after them.

A peculiarity of the Russian language must still be mentioned: it requires the adjective which accompanies the nouns formed of the numerals *полъ* (as *полчасá, полгода*), as also the numerals *полтора, полтретья*, to be placed in the *nominative plural*: e. g. *первые полчасá, the first half hour*. But in the other cases the adjective agrees with the substantive; e. g. *въ продолженіе перваго получасá, in the space of the first half hour*.

3. With the numerals in the oblique cases, the substantive is always put in the plural. *a)* When the numerals have a gender, as: *пятѣкъ, дюжина, тысяча, миллионъ*, the noun is always put in the *genitive*, and the same rule applies equally to *сѣрокъ* and *сто*, when used in the plural. *b)* With the other numerals, such as: *два, оба, три, четыре, пять, сѣрокъ, девяносто, сто, &c.*, the noun agrees with the numeral in *case*. We remark further that in words compounded of two numerals the case of the substantive is determined by the later numeral. Thus we say: *съ тремя стáми воиновъ, with three hundred warriors*, and *со ста тремя воинами, with a hundred and three warriors*;

въ сорокъ верстахъ, *at forty wersts*, and сорокъ сороковъ церквей, *one thousand six hundred churches* (forty forties).

4. With the preposition *по*, indicating the distribution of an equal quantity, the numerals два, три, четыре, две, три, четыре, retain the inflection of the nominative, and then the noun is put in the *genitive singular*, but the other numerals are put in the dative (сорокъ, сто and девяносто then take their regular inflection *у*), and the noun is put in the *genitive plural*. Thus we say: по два рубля, по пяти рублѣй, по сороку рублѣй, *to each two, five, forty roobles*.

The numerals полтора, полтретья, &c., take also with the preposition *по* the inflection *у* of the dative, and the noun in the *genitive singular*: in all other cases the noun and the numeral agree; e. g. по полутора рубль, *to each a rooble and a half*.

EXERCISES ON THE NUMERALS.

Man has one tongue, one nose, two eyes, *У (gen.) человекъ (есть) одинъ языкъ, одинъ носъ, два глаза,* two ears, two cheeks, two arms, two legs, ten fingers *два уха, два щека, два рука, два нога, десять палецъ* at the hands and ten toes at the feet, thirty two teeth, *на (prep.) рука и десять палецъ на нога, тридцать два зубъ,* and seven vertebres. Leap year has four *и семь позвонокъ. Въ (prep.) високосный годъ (есть) четыре* seasons, 12 months, 52 weeks and two days, or 366 days, *время, 12 мѣсяцъ, 52 недѣля и два день т, или 366 день,* or 8784 hours, or 527,040 minutes. The book has a *или 8784 часъ, или 527,040 минутъ. Въ (prep.) книга (есть)* hundred leaves less one. The two brothers and the two *сто* sisters. An hour and a half, and a minute and a half. Two *сестра.* Полтора часъ, и полтора минутъ. Два *рооблес* and a half, and three kopecs and a half. *рубль т съ (instr.) половина и три копейка съ половина.*

The berkovetz has 10 poods; the pood 40 pounds; the
 Въ (*prep.*) бѣрковецъ (*естъ*) 10 пудъ; въ пудъ 40 фунтъ; въ
 pound 32 loths; the loth 3 zolotniks; the pound has 96
 фунтъ 32 лоть; въ лоть 3 золотникъ; въ фунтъ 96
 zolotniks.
 золотникъ.

Two beaver-hats, three silk-handkerchiefs, four pen-
 Два пуховый шляпа, три шелковый платокъ, четыре перо-
 knives, five cups of porcelain, and six magnificent
 чинный ножикъ, пять чашка фарфоровый, и шесть прекрасны
 pictures. These two black crows; these three white feathers;
 картина. Сии два черны воронъ; тѣ три бѣлы перо;
 my four new books; these five petulant children. The
 мой четыре новы книга; эти пять рѣзвы дитя. Оба
 two poor orphan boys, and the two unhappy orphan girls.
 бѣдны сиротѣ, и оба несчастны сиротѣ.

Two servants, three workmen, four children, six
 Двое слугѣ, трое мастеровой, четверо дитя, шестеро
 soldiers, two watches, three pairs of spectacles, five pairs
 солдатъ, двои часы, трои очки, пѣтеры
 of scissors. The first hour and a half. The first forty days;
 ножницы. Первый полтора часъ. Первый сборокъ день;
 the second hundred crowns, and the last thousand florins.
 второй сто ефимокъ, и послѣдній тысяча гульденъ.

I have bought an ox and a horse, a table and
 Я купилъ одинъ быкъ и одинъ лошадь, одинъ столъ и
 a mirror. Twenty one roobles, fifty one
 одинъ зѣркало. Двадцать одинъ рубль, пятьдесятъ одинъ
 kopecks. The thousand one nights. A young man of thirty
 копейка. Тысяча и одинъ ночь. Молодой человекъ тридцать
 one years less twenty one days. Do not judge
 одинъ годъ безъ (*гм.*) двадцать одинъ день. Не суди

of a man by a single fault and by a single
о (*prep.*) человекъ по (*dat.*) одинъ проступокъ и по одинъ
error. An officer with twenty one soldiers. Peter
ошибка. Офицеръ съ (*instr.*) двадцать одинъ солдатъ. Петръ
the First and Catharine the Second reigned in the
Первый и Екатерина Второй царствовали въ (*prep.*)
eighteenth century. The Swedes revere Charles XII, and
восемнадцатый вѣкъ. Шведъ уважають Карлъ XII, а
the French have erected a monument to Henry IV. The
Французъ поставили памятникъ Генрихъ IV.
article was written on the 15th of the month of January,
Статья, была писана (*gen.*) 15 мѣсяцъ январѣ *m*,
in the year 1823, and the event relates to the VI
годъ 1823, и происшествіе относится къ (*dat.*) VI
century, and particularly to the year 573.
вѣкъ, а именно къ (*dat.*) годъ 573.

A cupboard with a dozen of plates of porcelain, or
Шкапъ съ (*instr.*) дюжина тарелка фарфоровый, или
with twelve plates of porcelain. A droshky drawn by
съ двѣнадцать тарелка фарфоровый. Дрожки, запряжённый (*instr.*)
a pair of bay horses, or by two bay horses; and a carriage
пара вороной лошади, или два вороной лошади; и карета
drawn by six sorrel horses, or by a team of six
запряжённый (*instr.*) шесть рыжий лошади, или шестёрка
sorrel horses. The town is situated a thousand wersts
рыжий лошади. Городъ лежитъ въ (*prep.*) тысяча верста
from here, the village a hundred wersts, and the hamlet forty
отсюда, село во сто верста, а деревня въ сорокъ
wersts. At Moscow there were 1600 churches, or forty
верста. Въ (*prep.*) Москва было 1600 церковь, или сорокъ
forties of churches. I am satisfied with eighty
сорокъ церковь. Я довольствуюсь (*instr.*) восемьдесятъ

roobles (or with two forties of roobles) a month,
 рубль *m* (или два сорокъ рубль) въ (*acc.*) мѣсяць,
 i. e. with 960 roobles a year. He will not live till
 to есть 960 рубль въ (*acc.*) годъ. Онъ не доживётъ до (*gen.*)
 forty years; and she died at forty three. She is
 сорокъ лѣто; и она умерла (*gen.*) сорокъ три лѣто. Она (*есть*)
 satisfied with forty kopecs, and she admired a
 довольный (*instr.*) сорокъ копейка, и она удивилась (*dat.*)
 hundred pictures. He cannot live on less than a
 сто картина. Онъ не можетъ прожить мѣнѣе (*gen.*)
 hundred thousand roobles a year. A town with two
 сто тысяча рубль *m* въ (*acc.*) годъ. Городъ съ (*instr.*) два
 towers; a chest with six drawers; a house with forty windows;
 башня; комодъ съ шесть ящикъ; домъ съ сорокъ окно;
 a fortress with a hundred cannons; a church with five
 крѣпость *f* со сто пушка; церковь *f* о (*prep.*) пять
 cupolas; a house of three stories; a village with four
 глава; домъ о (*prep.*) три ярусъ; деревня съ (*instr.*) тетыре
 wind-mills. I love equally the two sons and the two
 вѣтряный мельница. Я люблю равно оба сынъ и оба
 daughters. He has four children, and she has left five
 дочь *f*. Онъ имѣетъ четверо дитя, а она оставила пятеро
 orphans. My brother has not been able to manage these two
 сиротѣ. Мой братъ не могъ слѣдить съ (*instr.*) этими два
 restive horses. He has lived long with his five
 упрямый лошади *f*. Онъ жилъ долго съ (*instr.*) своими пять
 cousins german. To this million of old Prussian
 братъ двоюродный. Къ (*dat.*) этому миллионъ старый прусскій
 crowns must be added a thousand of these new roobles.
 оѣймокъ надобно прибавить тысяча тѣхъ новыи рубль *m*.
 To each a hundred roobles and forty kopecs.
 Каждый по (*dat.*) сто рубль *m* и по (*dat.*) сорокъ копейка.

Some months have thirty days
 Въ (*prep.*) нѣкоторый мѣсяцъ (*естъ*) по (*dat.*) тридцать день *m*,
 and others thirty one days. In each coachhouse
 а въ другой по тридцать одинъ день. Въ (*prep.*) каждый сарай
 there were two carriages, and in each carriage
 было по (*nom.*) два карѣта, а въ каждый карѣта по (*nom.*)
 three men, and four women. To each a hundred and
 три мужина и по четыре жѣнщина. Каждый по (*dat.*) сто по
 ninety roobles and forty five kopecks. We
 девяносто рубль *m* и по сорокъ по пять копѣйка. У насъ
 have each twenty seven points. Every part of
 (*естъ*) по (*dat.*) двадцать по семь очки *m*. Каждый часть *f*
 the work is sold at the rate of 2 rooble and a half of silver.
 сочинѣнiе продаѣтся по (*dat.*) полтора рубль *m* (*instr.*) серебро.

By the morning one must not judge of midday. During
 По (*dat.*) утро не должно судить о (*prep.*) полдень *m*. Въ (*acc.*)
 the first half day he did not know what to do. At
 первый полдня онъ не зналъ что дѣлать. Въ (*acc.*)
 four o' clock in the morning, or at five o' clock in the
 четыре часъ по (*prep.*) полночь *f*, или въ пять часъ по
 afternoon. That happened during the latter half of
 полдень *m*. Это случилось въ (*acc.*) послѣднiй полгода
 the year 1844. The first half hour passed quietly. During
 годъ 1844. Первый полчаса прошли спокойно. Въ (*acc.*)
 the space of the first half hour. I had a hundred and
 продолженiе первый полчаса. За мною было полтораста
 fifty thousand roobles of annual revenue.
 тысяча рубль *m* годово́й доходъ.

THE PRONOUNS.

Division
of the
pronouns.

44. — The *pronouns* (мѣстоимѣнія) in Russian are divided into seven kinds.

1. The *personal* pronouns (личныя) are, in the first person: я, *I*; plur. мы, *we*; in the second ты, *thou*; plur. вы, *you*; and in the third person онъ, *he* (*fem.* она, *she*; *neut.* оно, *it*); plur. они, *they* (*fem.* онѣ, *they*). There is in Russian another personal pronoun, which is applied to all the three persons and both numbers, and which is used when the action of the object returns on the agent: e. g. я себя знаю, *I know myself*; ты себя бережѣшь, *thou takest care of thyself*; мы себя обманываемъ, *we deceive ourselves*. This is called the *reflected* (возвратное) personal pronoun.

When the reflected pronoun is used at the end of the verbs, it is contracted into ся or съ; e. g. домъ стрѣится, *the house is being built*; я моюсь, *I wash myself* (instead of строить себя, мою себя).

2. The *possessive* pronouns (притяжательныя) are, in the first person: мой, *my* or *mine*; нашъ, *our* or *ours*; in the second person: твой, *thy* or *thine*; вашъ, *your* or *yours*; and for all the three persons: the reflected свой, *my, thy, his, our, your, their*.

In Russian there is no possessive pronoun for the third person: its place being supplied by the genitive of the personal pronoun: егѡ, *of him* or *his*; ея, *of her* or *her*; ихъ, *of them* or *their*; e. g. я былъ у егѡ брата, *I have been to his brother* (*to the brother of him*); я знаю ея мужа, *I know her husband* (*the husband of her*); я это дѣлаю для ихъ дѣтѣй, *I do that for their children* (*for the children of them*).

3. The *demonstrative* pronouns (указательныя) are: сей, этотъ, оный, *this*; тотъ, *that*; такой, таковой, такой, *such* or *such an one*.

4. The *relative* pronouns (относительныя) are: кто, *who* or *he who*; что, *which* or *that which*; который, кой, *who*; какой, каковóй, коlíкий, *who* or *he who*; чей, *whose*; сколько, *how much* or *so much*.

5. The *interrogative* pronouns (вопросительныя) are the same as the relative.

6. The *determinative* (опредѣлительныя) or *ampliative* (дополнительныя) pronouns are: самъ, сáмый, *self*; весь, *all*; кáждый, вся́кий, *each*. To this class belong also the numerals одинъ, *a single one* or *one only*, and оба, *both*.

The pronouns самъ and сáмый have the same meaning, but the former is used with the personal pronouns and with the names of animate objects, the latter with the demonstrative pronouns and the names of inanimate and abstract objects: e. g. я самъ, *myself*; онъ самъ, *himself*; самого себя, *one's self*; отецъ самъ, *the father himself*; тотъ сáмый, сей сáмый, *the very same*; сáмая смерть, *death itself*. The pronoun сáмый before a qualifying adjective expresses the superlative (§ 38. 3).

7. The *indefinite* pronouns (неопредѣлённыя) are: нѣкто, *somebody*; нѣчто, *something*; никто, *nobody*; ничто, *nothing*; кто ли́бо, кто нибу́дь, кто-то, кто ни есть, *whoever*; что ли́бо, что нибу́дь, что-то, что ни есть, *whatever*; нѣ́кий, нѣ́какій, нѣ́который, какой-то, *some*; ни какой, ни кото́рый, ни одинъ, *not any, none*; друго́й, ино́й, про́чій, *other*; сто́лько, *as much, as far*; нѣ́сколько, *some*; мно́го, *much*; ма́ло, *little*; другъ дру́га, *each other*; тотъ и дру́го́й, *the one and the other*; вся́къ, *each*.

45. — The pronouns are either substantive or adjective. 1) The *substantive* pronouns are: я, ты, онъ, себя, кто, что, нѣ́кто, нѣ́что, никто, ничто,

PARADIGMS OF THE DECLENSION OF THE PRONOUNS.

SINGULAR.

Masculine and neuter genders.

PARADIGMS:	Nom. or Acc.	G. or A.	Dat.	Inst.	Prep.
1.	я, I	меня. мнѣ.	мнѣ.	мною. мнѣ.	{ in the three genders.
2.	ты, thou	тебѣ. тебѣ.	тебѣ.	тобою. тебѣ.	
3.	онъ, he	его	ему	имъ	{ in the three persons, the three genders and the two numbers.
4.	—, himself	себѣ. себѣ.	себѣ. себѣ.	собою. себѣ.	
5.	кто, who, he who	кого. кому.	кому.	кемъ. кемъ.	{ in the mass, and fem. genders, the three persons and the two numbers.
6.	что, which, that which	чего. чему.	чему.	чѣмъ. чѣмъ.	
7.	мнѣ, mine	моею. моему.	моему.	моими. моими.	{ in the neuter gender, the third person and the two numbers.
8.	нашъ, our, ours.	наше	нашему. нашему.	нашими. нашими.	
9.	вашъ, your, yours.	ваше	вашему. вашему.	вашими. вашими.	{ in the neuter gender, the third person and the two numbers.
10.	его, his. this.	его	ему	имъ	
11.	его, his. that.	его	ему	имъ	
12.	его, his. this.	его	ему	имъ	
13.	его, his. whose, of whom.	его	ему	имъ	
14.	его, his. self.	его	ему	имъ	
15.	его, his. all.	его	ему	имъ	
16.	его, his. sole	его	ему	имъ	

Feminine gender.

PLURAL.

In the three genders.

PARADIGMS:	Nom. G.D. and P.	Acc. Inst.	N. or A. G.A. and P.	Dat. Inst.
1.	мы, we	нами. нами.	{ in the three genders.	намъ. намъ.
2.	вы, you	вами. вами.		вамъ. вамъ.
3.	они, they	ими. ими.	{ in the three persons, the three genders and the two numbers.	имъ. имъ.
4.	—, themselves	собою. собою.		сими. сими.
5.	кто, who, he who	кого. кому.	{ in the mass, and fem. genders, the three persons and the two numbers.	кемъ. кемъ.
6.	что, which, that which	чего. чему.		чѣмъ. чѣмъ.
7.	мнѣ, mine	моею. моему.	{ in the neuter gender, the third person and the two numbers.	моими. моими.
8.	нашъ, our, ours.	наше		нашему. нашему.
9.	вашъ, your, yours.	ваше	вашему. вашему.	вашими. вашими.
10.	его, his. this.	его	ему	имъ
11.	его, his. that.	его	ему	имъ
12.	его, his. this.	его	ему	имъ
13.	его, his. whose, of whom.	его	ему	имъ
14.	его, his. self.	его	ему	имъ
15.	его, his. all.	его	ему	имъ
16.	его, his. sole	его	ему	имъ

The *tonic accent* in the declension of the pronouns is, with some rare exceptions, placed on the terminations of the cases, as is seen in the accompanying paradigms.

of which one only (*она*) has all the three genders; *себя*, *кто*, *что* are the same in both numbers, and *себя* has no nominative. 2) All the other pronouns are *adjective*, and like the adjectives they have three genders, two numbers and seven cases, and agree with the substantive to which they belong.

46. — The substantive pronouns are declined in a peculiar manner as will be seen later. Those of the adjective pronouns which end like the adjectives, in *ый* and *ій* (or *ой*), fem. *ая*, neut. *ое*, such as: *который*, *оний*, *самый*, *каждый*, *таковой*, *всякий*, are declined according to the 1st and 2d paradigms of adjectives (§ 41); while such as have a termination differing from that of the adjectives, such as: *мой*, *наш*, *сам*, *сей*, also *такой* and *какой*, are declined in a particular way.

The following observations on the declension of pronouns are necessary.

1. The oblique cases of the pronoun of the third person (3d paradigm) take the euphonic letter *н*, when they are preceded by a preposition; e. g. *у него*, *to him*; *къ нему*, *towards him*; *съ нею*, *with her*; *о нём*, *of him*; *безъ нихъ*, *without them*, &c. But this addition does not take place when the genitive *его*, *ей*, *ихъ*, serves as a possessive pronoun; e. g. *въ его домъ*, *in his house*; *къ ихъ пользъ*, *to their advantage*. — The genitive singular feminine of this pronoun sometimes takes the inflection of the accusative; e. g. *я её не видѣлъ* (instead of *ей*), *I have not seen her*; *у неё* (instead of *у ней*), *to her*, and this inflection is sometimes contracted: *у ней*.

2. According to the 5th and 6th paradigms (*кто* and *что*) are declined the pronouns compounded from *кто* and *что*; e. g. *никто*, *nobody*; *ничто*, *nothing*; *нѣкто*, *кто нибудь*, *кто либо*, *кто-то*, *somebody*; *нѣчто*, *что нибудь*, *что либо*, *что-то*, *something*; remarking that, if there be a preposition with *никто* and *ничто*, it is placed between the particle *ни* and the pronoun;

е. g. НИ У КОГО́, *to nobody*; НИ КЪ ЧЕМУ́, *to nothing*; НИ ЗА ЧТО, *for nothing*; НИ СЪ КѢМЪ, *with nobody*; and also observing that the parts *нибۇдь*, *либо* and *то* are invariable.

3. According to the 7th paradigm (МОЙ) are declined the pronouns ТВОЙ, *thy*; СВОЙ, *his*, and КОЙ, *who*, observing that this last is not used in the nominative and accusative singular of any of the genders, and that it has the tonic accent in all the cases on the first syllable (КО́его, КО́и, КО́ихъ, &c.). Its compound НѢКІЙ, *some*, is declined in the same manner in the singular; but in the plural it takes the inflections of the adjectives: *N. НѢКІе, f. НѢКІя; G. НѢКІихъ, D. НѢКІимъ, &c.*

4. According to the 8th paradigm (НАШЪ) is declined the pronoun ВАШЪ, *your*.

5. According to the 16th paradigm (КАКО́Й) are declined ТАКО́Й, *such*; НѢКАКІЙ, *some*, and ЭТАКІЙ, *such an one*.

6. The other pronouns which have the adjective termination *ый* and *ій* or *ой* (fem. *ая*, neut. *ое*), such as: О́ный, СА́мый, ВСЯ́кій, ДРУГО́й, ИНО́й, КАКОВО́й, ТАКОВО́й, are declined according to the 1st and 2d paradigms of the adjectives (§ 41). The pronouns КАКОВО́й and ТАКОВО́й have also the apocopated termination: *какѡеъ* and *такѡеъ*. In the pronoun ДРУГЪ ДРУ́га, *each other*, which is used for the three genders and both numbers, the first part remains indeclinable, while the second is declined like a substantive; *G. другъ дру́га, D. другъ дру́гу, A. другъ дру́га, I. другъ дру́гомъ, P. другъ о дру́гъ*. The pronouns САМЪ-ДРУ́гъ, *two together*; САМЪ-ТРЕТЕ́й, *three together*, &c., are indeclinable and are used for all the three persons, the three genders and both numbers.

7. The pronoun *всякъ* is used instead of *всякій* *человѣкъ*, but only in the masculine singular. The pronouns *ско́лько*, *стѡ́лько*, *нѣско́лько*, have in the singular, besides this termination which serves both for the nominative and accusative, only the dative in *у* with the preposition *по* (*по ско́льку*, &c.); and in the plural they have only the genitive, the dative, the instrumental and the prepositional cases (*ско́лькихъ*, *ско́лькимъ*, *ско́лькими*, &c.).

8. *Оди́нъ* (parad. 15) is both a numerative and a determinative pronoun. The same is the case with the Slavonic word

единъ (м. едино, ф. одина), which is used in an elevated style, and which is declined in the singular like an adjective of the full termination: *Г. одинаго, единой; Д. единому, &c.*; but in the plural it takes the aprocopated form: *едины, единыхъ, единымъ.*

EXERCISES ON THE PRONOUNS.

I love thee, and thou offendest me. We esteem him, Personal pronouns
Я люблю ты, а ты обижаешь я. Я уважаемъ онъ,

as to her, we love her sincerely. I have much money,
а онъ • я любимъ душевно. У (*gen.*) я (*est*) много деньги,

and thou hast not a penny. Protect him, and
а у (*gen.*) ты нѣтъ ни (*gen.*) копѣйка. Заступись за (*acc.*) онъ, и

depend upon her. Take a seat with me, and come
понадѣйся на (*acc.*) онъ. Посиди съ (*instr.*) я, и приходи

with him. Tell her, to come to me. Without
съ (*instr.*) онъ. Скажи онъ, чтобъ онъ пришлѣ ко (*dat.*) я. Безъ (*gen.*)

him, without her and without you, life is wearisome to me.
онъ, безъ онъ и безъ ты, жизнь (*est*) скучный я.

I do not see them, and I will do every thing for them.
Я не вижу онъ, а я сдѣлаю всё для (*gen.*) онъ.

We esteem you, and you have forgotten us. Depend
Я уважаемъ ты, а ты забыва я. Будь увѣренъ

on me; I will speak of thee. It is agreeable to me
во (*prep.*) я; я поговорю о (*prep.*) ты. (*est*) Приятно я

to be with her. I do not trust myself, and thou art
быть съ (*instr.*) онъ. Я не доверяю себя, а ты (*est*)

contented with thyself. We take care of ourselves, and they
довольный (*instr.*) себя. Я бережемъ себя, а онъ

do themselves harm.

себя вредять.

Possessive
pronouns.

My brother, thy sister and his son have studied together.

Мой братъ, твой сестра и онъ сынъ учились вмѣстѣ.

I try to be agreeable to your master and to our
Я стараюсь угодить, вашъ учитель *т* и нашъ
inspector. My house is more beautiful than thine, and
смотритель *т*. Мой домъ (*есть*) красивый (*ген.*) твой, а
thy dog is less than mine. I live without them,
твой собака (*есть*) малый (*ген.*) мой. Я живу безъ (*ген.*) онъ,
and I can dispense with their help. Do not boast
и могу обойтись безъ (*ген.*) онъ помощь *ф*. Не хвались (*instr.*)
of thy labours, and think of thy years. Draw near
свой трудъ, а подумай о (*prep.*) свой лѣто. Подойди къ (*dat.*)
my table, and give some money to thy sister. We talk
мой столъ, и подари (*ген.*) деньги *ф* твой сестра. Я говоримъ
about our affairs, and you occupy yourself with your lesson.
о (*prep.*) свой дѣло, а ты занимаетесь (*instr.*) свой урокъ.
Study is bitter, but its fruits are sweet. Thy gardens
Учѣніе (*есть*) горькій, но онъ плодъ (*суть*) сладкій. Твой садъ
are superb; I admire their beauties.
(*суть*) прекрасный; я удивляюсь онъ (*dat.*) красотѣ.

Demonstra-
tive pro-
nouns.

Dost thou see this dog and this cat, these men and

Видишь ли этотъ собака и этотъ котъ, этотъ люди *т* и

those trees? In these countries there is no gold; and
тотъ дѣрево? Въ (*prep.*) этотъ земля нѣтъ (*ген.*) золото; и

in those no silver. I have heard that from
въ (*prep.*) тотъ нѣтъ (*ген.*) серебрó. Я слышалъ этотъ отъ (*ген.*)

your brother, but I do not believe it. I praise your
вашъ братъ, но я не вѣрю (*dat.*) этотъ. Я хвалю вашъ

project; it is long since I had foreseen it. Have you
намѣреніе; давно я предвидѣлъ оный. Живёшь ли

lived long in this town? I admire this garden,
ты давно въ (*prep.*) сей городъ? Я удивляюсь (*dat.*) этотъ садъ,

but that is more beautiful. These pens are blunt; these
а тотъ (есть) хоро́шій. Э́тотъ перо́ (суть) тупо́й; сей

houses are of stone; these streets are narrow. Such eyes
домъ ка́менный; тотъ у́лица узко́й. Тако́й глазо́
are piercing; such actions do not do honour.
(суть) прои́цательный; тако́й де́ло не прино́сятъ (gen.) че́сть.

Such are men.

Таково́й (суть) люди́ т.

The relative pronouns agree in *gender* and *number* with the substantive to which they belong, and take the *case* required by the following verb, with the exception of the pronoun *чей*, which agrees in gender, number and case with the accompanying substantive. Relative pronouns.

The man whom you see, is very intelligent.

Человѣкъ, кото́рый ты ви́дишь, (есть) о́чень у́мный.

The book which you read is very agreeable. I know

Кни́га, кото́рый ты чита́ете, (есть) о́чень при́ятный. Я зна́ю

the affair of which you speak. The water with which

де́ло, о (prep.) кото́рый ты говори́те. Во́да, (instr.) кото́рый

I wash myself, is very cold. Beware of him who

я мою́сь, (есть) о́чень холо́дный. Береги́сь (gen.) то́тъ, кто

flatters thee. He who has much business,

лести́тъ (dat.) ты. То́тъ у (gen.) кто (есть) мно́го (gen.) де́ло,

does not think of pleasures. Learn that which

не ду́маетъ о (prep.) заба́ва. Учи́тесь (dat.) то́тъ, (gen.)

you are ignorant of. Here is cloth like that of which I

что ты не зна́ете. Вотъ (nom.) сукно́ тако́й, како́й я

bought some. Such was the chief, such were the soldiers.

купи́лъ. Каково́й былъ военача́льникъ, таково́й и вои́нъ.

That is the friend, in whose hands is my destiny.

Вотъ (nom.) дру́гъ, въ (prep.) че́й рука́ (есть) мой судьба́.

Listen to those in whose house thou hast lived.

Слу́шайся (gen.) то́тъ, въ (prep.) че́й домо́ ты жи́лъ.

There is a book (*of those*) such as there are few of, and
 Вотъ книга (*изъ gen. такой*), (*gen.*) какой (*есть*) мало, и

an opportunity like those are rare.

случай каковой (*суть*) рѣдкій.

Interroga-
 tive pro-
 nouns,

What o'clock is it, and at what o'clock wilt
 Который часъ (*есть*), и въ (*prep.*) который часъ

thou come? With what books dost thou occupy thyself, and
 придёшь? (*instr.*) Какой книга занимаешься, и

what people live here? Under what chief
 какой люди *т* живутъ здѣсь? Подъ (*instr.*) который начальникъ

dost thou serve, and what language dost thou learn? Whose
 ты служишь, и (*dat.*) какой языкъ ты учишься? Чей

are these houses? By whose permission hast thou
 (*суть*) этотъ домъ? Съ (*gen.*) чей позволеніе ты вышелъ

gone out? I have not seen whose hat has been thrown
 со двора? Я не видалъ, чей шляпа бросили

to the ground. I do not know with whose children she
 на (*acc.*) полъ. Я не знаю, съ (*instr.*) чей дѣтя онъ

is walking. About what dost thou trouble thyself, and
 гуляетъ. О (*prep.*) что ты заботишься, и

in what way have I deserved thy friendship? On what
 (*instr.*) что я заслужилъ твой дружба? Съ (*instr.*) что

can one congratulate thee, and from whom hast thou
 можно поздравить ты, и отъ (*gen.*) кто ты

received this money? How many wersts are there
 получилъ этотъ деньги? Сколько (*gen.*) верста (*есть*) отъ

from this town to that? Of how many volumes
 (*gen.*) этотъ городъ до (*gen.*) тотъ? Изъ (*gen.*) сколько томъ

is this work composed? How many roobles
 сей сочиненіе состоитъ? По (*dat.*) сколько (*gen.*) рубль *т*

will fall to you to each of this profit?
 достанется ты изъ (*gen.*) этотъ прибыль?

Thou thyself wilt be of my opinion: the sound even of his ^{Determinative pronouns.}
 Ты самъ согласишься съ (*instr.*) я: звукъ самый онъ
 voice is agreeable. I take this apartment of the
 гóлосъ (*естъ*) пріятный. Я нанимаю сей квартира у (*gen.*)
 proprietor himself. Vices themselves find with you an
 хозяинъ самъ. Порокъ самый находятъ у (*gen.*) ты
 excuse. He always speaks of himself. You are
 извиненіе. Онъ всегда говорить о (*prep.*) себя самъ. Ты (*есте*)
 discontented with yourselves. We have seen her herself.
 недовольный (*instr.*) себя самъ. Я видѣли онъ самъ.
 Death itself is not frightful. We all content ourselves
 Смерть *f* самый (*естъ*) не страшный. Я весь довольствуемся
 with our only salaries. So think women alone. We
 (*instr.*) одинъ жалованье. Такъ думаютъ женщина одинъ. Я
 two will serve God alone. In each assembly
 оба хотимъ служить (*dat.*) Богъ одинъ. Въ (*prep.*) каждый собраніе
 there were citizens of both sexes. They are scattered
 были гражданъ оба полъ. Онъ (*суть*) разсыяны
 in all the world. One must accustom one's self to
 по (*dat.*) весь свѣтъ. Надобно привыкать къ (*dat.*)
 every food.
 всякій пища.

There is not anybody here; do not ask help of Indefinite
 Нѣтъ (*gen.*) никто здѣсь; не проси (*gen.*) помощь *f* у (*gen.*) ^{pronouns.}
 anybody. Thou eatest nothing, and that serves no
 никто. Ты не ѣшь (*gen.*) ничто, и этотъ не годится къ (*dat.*)
 purpose. Learn something, and say that to somebody.
 ничто. Учись (*dat.*) что нибудь, и скажи этотъ кто нибудь.
 I will not sell my house for any thing in the world, and
 Я не продамъ (*gen.*) свой домъ за (*acc.*) ничто, и
 you have sold yours for a mere nothing. Of nothing
 ты продали свой за ничто. Изъ (*gen.*) ничто

one can make nothing. During the space of some
 не сделаешь (*gen.*) ничто. Въ (*acc.*) теченіе нѣсколько
 months he has bought every day some*
 мѣсяцъ онъ покупалъ ежедневно по (*dat.*) нѣсколько (*gen.*)
 hundreds of peasants.
 сто • душѣ.

The two sisters speak badly of each other. The
 Оба сестра говорятъ дурно другъ о (*prep.*) другъ.

Englishmen and the French detest each other. We are
 Англичанинъ и Французъ ненавидятъ другъ друга. Я
 going to take a walk with one another. These houses
 ходимъ гулять другъ съ (*instr.*) другъ. Сей домъ
 are situated one behind the other. The boards are thrown
 лежатъ одинъ за (*instr.*) другой. Доска (*суть*) набросаны
 one with another.
 одинъ съ (*instr.*) другой.

THE VERB.

Division of
 verbs.

47. — The *verbs* (глаголы) of the Russian language are divided, according to their meaning, into four classes, which are called *voices* (залогѣ), viz:

1. The *active verbs* (дѣйствительные), such as:
 дѣлать, *to make*; любить, *to love*; мыть, *to wash*;
 одѣвать, *to clothe*.

2. The *pronominal verbs* (мѣстоименные), formed of active verbs by means of the reflected pronoun *ся*, contracted from *себя*. These verbs are: *a) reflected* (возвратные), as: мыться, *to wash one's self*; одѣваться, *to dress one's self*; *b) reciprocal* (взаимные), as: обниматься, *to embrace each other*; ссориться, *to dispute with each other*; and *c) common* (общіе), which with the termination of reflected

and reciprocal verbs have an active or neuter meaning, as: *бояться, to fear; смеяться, to laugh.*

3. The *neuter* verbs (средние), as: *спать, to sleep; стоять, to stand.* To this class also belong the *inchoative* (начинательные), as: *блѣть, to whiten, become white; сохнуть, to dry, become dry.* Among these verbs two are to be distinguished from the rest; viz: the neuter verb *быть, to be*, and the inchoative *стать, to become*, which help to form and conjugate the other verbs, and which on that account are called *auxiliaries* (вспомогательные).

4. The *passive* verbs (страдательные), as: *быть любимымъ, to be loved; быть почитаемымъ, to be venerated; дѣло сдѣлано, the thing is accomplished.*

The reflected voice is often used in the passive sense, especially when applied to inanimate objects, e. g. *дѣло дѣлается, the thing is being accomplished; домъ строится, the house is being built.*

48. — The principal inflections of the Russian verbs are: *tense* (время), *aspect* (видъ) and *mood* (наклонѣнiе), and the secondary inflections are: *person* (лицѣ), *number* (число) and *gender* (родъ). Inflections of the verb.

49. — The *tenses* of the Russian verbs are only three in number: 1) the *present* (настоящее время); 2) the *preterit* (прошедшее), and 3) the *future* (будущее), as: *я читаю, I read; я читалъ, I have read; я буду читать, I shall read.* Tenses

50. — Though the Russian verbs have only these three tenses, they have other inflections to indicate duration, accomplishment, reiteration, or other circumstances accompanying the action. These shades, or varieties of meaning, to which the Russian grammarians have given the name of *aspects* or Aspects.

degrees, are expressed by a change of termination or by means of the prepositions. The prepositions, being joined to verbs, form the *prepositional* (предложные) verbs, while such as have no preposition are termed *simple* (простые) or *a-prepositional*. This division of the verbs has an influence on the number and nature of their aspects. The following are the aspects of the Russian verbs.

1. The *imperfect* aspect (несовершенный видъ), which indicates that the action is being, has been, or will be performed without intimating, whether it is or will be finished; e. g. я дѣлаю, *I make*; я дѣлалъ, *I was occupied to make*; я буду дѣлать, *I shall make*; я просматриваю, *I examine*, я просматривалъ, *I set about examining*; я буду просматривать, *I shall examine*. This aspect is subdivided into definite and indefinite.

a) The *definite* (опредѣлённый) imperfect aspect indicates that the action is performed at a given moment: e. g. птица летитъ, *the bird flies (is flying now)*; заяцъ бѣжитъ, *the hare runs (is running at this moment)*.

b) The *indefinite* (неопредѣлённый) imperfect aspect expresses the action in an indeterminate manner, without reference to the time when it is performed, and also indicates that the acting person is accustomed to perform, or has the power of performing the action: e. g. птицы летаютъ, *the birds fly (have the power of flying)*; зайцы бѣгаютъ, *the hares run (are accustomed to run)*.

The definite and indefinite meaning of the imperfect aspect is not marked by any particular inflection, except in the case of verbs which express movement or change of place. The

other verbs, having properly speaking only the indefinite imperfect aspect, take the definite meaning without changing their termination; e. g. *Васілій тепѣрь пьѣтъ квасъ*, *Basil is now drinking kwass*; *Васілій пьѣтъ и квасъ и воду, что попадѣтся*, *Basil drinks both kwass and water, whichever happens to be there.*

2. The *perfect aspect* (совершенный), which indicates that the action has been, or will be entirely finished; e. g. *я сдѣлалъ*, *I have made, I have finished*, *я сдѣлаю*, *I shall make, I shall finish making*; *я просмотрѣлъ*, *I have entirely examined*; *я просмотрю*, *I shall finish examining*. This aspect is subdivided into aspect of duration and aspect of unity.

a) The perfect aspect of *duration* (длительный) indicates that the action has been, or will be performed by many movements, and has had or will have any duration; e. g. *птицы выклевали ему глаза*, *the birds have put out his eyes with beak-strokes*; *я пропою пѣсню*, *I shall sing over this air.*

b) The perfect aspect of *unity* (однократный) indicates that the action has been, or will be performed only once, and has lasted only a moment; e. g. *я зывнулъ*, *I have yawned, I have made a yawn*; *онъ тронетъ ещё разъ ваше хладное сердце*, *he will once more touch your insensible heart*; *птица выключула ему глазъ*, *the bird has put out to him an eye.*

3. The *iterative aspect* (многократный), which indicates that the action has been performed repeatedly, and that it is long passed; e. g. *въ молодыя лѣта я жила въ деревнѣ*, *in my youth I often lived in the country.*

On the subject of these aspects we have to make the following observations:

1. They are never all found in a single verb, as we shall see later. We merely observe in this place that the imperfect, perfect of unity and iterative aspects are found in the simple verbs, while the perfect of duration is met with in the prepositional and some few simple verbs, enumerated further (§ 65. 8). The aspects of a simple verb are generally distinguished in the following manner: the *definite imperfect* aspect is found in verbs signifying movement; e. g. бѣгѹ, *I run (am running now)*; идѹ, *I go (am going at this moment)*; the aspect *perfect of unity* is found in verbs which designate a physical action of men or animals, and ends in *нѹть* (preterit *нулъ*, future *нѹ*); e. g. шагнѹть, *to take a step*; кашлянѹть, *to cough once*; the *iterative* aspect usually ends in *ывать* or *увать* (preterit *ывалъ* or *увалъ*); e. g. дѣлывалъ, *he usually made*; говоривалъ, *he said at different times*. The other simple verbs, which have not these distinctive characters, are of the *indefinite imperfect* aspect. All these properties of the verbs will be examined subsequently (§§ 59—65).

2. The prepositions are particles which are joined to verbs to communicate to them the meaning of the completion of an action: e. g. дѣлать, *to make*, and сдѣлать, *to finish making, to have made*; писать, *to write*; and написать, *to finish writing, to have written*; and also to give them a particular meaning; e. g. хотѣть, *to go*, and входить, *to go in*; восходить, *to go up*; выходить, *to go out*; доходить, *to go up to, to attain*, &c.

3. The aspects have not all the same number of tenses; the imperfect aspect is used in all the three tenses; the perfect is employed in the preterit and future, while the iterative is met with only in the preterit.

Moods. 51. — The Russian verbs have only three *moods*, viz: 1) the *indicative* (изъявительное наклонѣніе), e. g. я хожѹ, *I walk*; мы гуляли, *we have taken a walk*, вы будете ѹжинать, *you will sup*; 2) the *imperative* (повелительное), e. g. ходи, *walk*; пойдѣмте, *let us go*; гуляйте, *take a walk*; and 3) the

infinitive (неокончательное), e. g. ходить, *to walk*; гулять, *to take a walk*; ужинать, *to sup.*—The indicative is the only mood which is found in all the tenses and all the aspects, the infinitive has inflections for the aspects, but has no tenses, as is also the case with the imperative, except that it is not used in the iterative aspect.

The *conditional* (предположительное) and *subjunctive* (сослагательное) moods of other languages are expressed in Russian by the preterit of indicative with the particle *бы*; e. g. я *желалъ бы ѣхать*, *I should wish or I should have wished to depart*; я *бы не думалъ, чтобы вы это сдѣлали*, *I should not have believed that you would have done that.*

52.—The indicative and imperative of the Russian verbs have further: 1) three inflections for the *persons*, e. g. читаю, *I read*; читаешь, *thou readest*; читаетъ, *he reads*; 2) two for the *numbers*; читаю, *I read*, and читаемъ, *we read*; читаешь, *thou readest*, and читаете, *you read*; читаетъ, *he reads*, and читаютъ, *they read*; читай, *read*, and читайте, *read (you)*; and 3) in the singular of the preterits, three for the *genders*, e. g. ученикъ читалъ, *the school-boy read*; дитя читало, *the child read*; служанка читала, *the maid read*.

Persons,
numbers and
genders.

The preterit of the Russian verbs is nothing but the past participle, in the apocopated form, joined to the substantive verb, which participle, like the attributive adjectives, was used, in the ecclesiastical Slavonic, in the apocopated termination, and with the three genders, e. g. азъ есмь сѣтворилъ, *I have created*; имѣла еси, *thou hast had* (in speaking to a woman). In Russian the auxiliary verb is understood, and we say: я сотворилъ, ты имѣла, and on this account the genders have become an inflection of the preterits.

There are some verbs which are only used in the third person singular, without expressing the person either by a

noun or a pronoun, and which for that reason are called *impersonal* (безличныя). These verbs have only the neuter in the preterit; such are: **нѣтъ**, *there is not* (*pret.* нѣ было, *fut.* не бѣдетъ); **разсвѣтаетъ**, *it begins to dawn* (*pret.* разсвѣло, *fut.* разсвѣтѣтъ); **хочется**, *the mind takes* (*pret.* хотѣлось).

Forms deriv-
ed from the
verb

53.—To complete our examination of all the parts of the Russian verbs, we will still add the forms which are derived from them; these are: 1) the *participle* (причѣстіе), 2) the *gerund* (дѣепричѣстіе), and 3) the *verbal noun* (отглагольное имя).

1. The *participles*, as parts of the verb, have voice, aspect and tense; and as adjectives, gender, number and case. As regards *voice*, they are active, neuter or pronominal, and passive; they have the same number of *aspects* as the verbs from which they are derived; but they have only two *tenses*, the present and the preterit.

2. The *gerunds* are simply verbal adverbs, which are formed from the active and neuter participles and can take the different aspects of the present and preterit.

3. The *verbal nouns* are abstract nouns which being derived from the infinitive, indicate the particular action, expressed by the aspect, from which they are formed; e. g. бѣганіе, *an habitual running*; разбиваніе, *a defeat*; разбитіе, *a complete defeat* (from the infinitives бѣгать, разбиѣдѣть and разбиѣть).

Conjugation. 54.—The changing of the inflections of the verbs in order to indicate the moods, tenses, numbers, persons and genders, is called *conjugation* (спряженіе); and the verbs are divided, according to the

manner in which they are conjugated, into *regular* (правильные) and *irregular* (неправильные). 1) The *regular* verbs are such as have a polysyllabic infinitive, ending in *mb* preceded by a vowel; e. g. дѣлать, *to make*; гулять, *to take a walk*; имѣть, *to have*; говорить, *to speak*; колѣть, *to sting*; тянуть, *to draw*; терѣть, *to rub*. 2) The *irregular* verbs are such as have a monosyllabic infinitive, ending either in *mb* preceded by a consonant, or in *чb*, *mb* and *шb*; e. g. бить, *to beat*; брать, *to take*; слыть, *to pass for*; вѣсть, *to conduct*; грызть, *to gnaw*; идти, *to go*; сѣчь, *to cut*.—The following remarks on the conjugation of verbs are important.

1. Each aspect of a verb, having necessarily an infinitive, is conjugated separately, without being mixed up with the other aspects of this verb.

2. The *infinitive* in verbs is the same as the nominative in nouns: this mood is the *direct* form, whence all the others, called the *oblique*, are derived. It ends in *mb* (seldom in *чb*, *mb*, *шb*).

3. The *present*, which is only found in the imperfect aspect (either definite or indefinite), ends, in the first person of the singular, in *ю* or *у* (very rarely in *мѣ* and *мѹ*).

4. The *preterit*, which is found in all the aspects, ends in *мѣ* and sometimes in *ѣ* (neut. *мо*, fem. *ла*; plur. *ли*).

5. The *future* has no particular inflection: in the imperfect aspect (either definite or indefinite) it is formed by the help of the auxiliary verbs *буду* or *стану*, joined to the infinitive; and in the perfect aspect (either of duration or of unity) this tense takes the form of the present.

6. The *imperative*, which is found in all the aspects, excepting the iterative aspect, ends, in the second person singular, in *и* with the accent, or, without accent, in *у* after two or three consonants, in *ѣ* after one consonant and in *ѹ* after a vowel.

ACTIVE, NEUTER AND PRONOMINAL.

[illegible]

Regular verbs.

*55.—The *regular* verbs are divided into three *conjugations*, according to the ending of the infinitive and the formation of the first person of the present.

1. The *first* conjugation embraces the verbs ending in the infinitive in *ть* with one of the vowels *а, я* or *н*, and of which the first person singular of the present is in *ю* with a vowel. This conjugation is subdivided into four *branches*, viz:

1st branch.	2d branch.	3rd branch.	4th branch.
Infinitive: . ать	о вать	ять	ять
Present: . . аю	ю	яю	ю

Examples: 1) дѣлать, *to make*, дѣлаю; 2) рисовѣть, *to draw*, рисую; плевѣть, *to spit*, плюю; 3) гулять, *to take a walk*, гуляю; 4) имѣть, *to have*, имѣю.

2. The *second* conjugation embraces such verbs as end in the infinitive in *ть* preceded by *и* or *о*, and by other vowels with a changeable consonant, and the first person in the present of which is in *ю* preceded by a consonant (sometimes by a vowel) or, according to the nature of the hissing letters, in *иу, чу, шу* and *шу*. This conjugation is subdivided into 7 *branches*, in the following order:

1st br.	2d br.	3rd br.	4th br.	5th br.	6th br.	7th br.
и	в ить	ж	и ить	т ить	с ить	и ить
Infinitive: < в ть	м вть	ч ить	л вть	т вть	с вть	ст ить
о	п ать	ш ать	з ать	к ать	х ать	ск ать
	ф	щ				
Present:	ю . .	лю . .	у . .	жу . .	чу . .	шу . .

Examples: 1) говорить, *to speak*, говорю; велѣть, *to order*, велю; колѣть, *to sting*, колю; 2) любить, *to love*, люблю; терпѣть,

to suffer, терплю; дремать, *to slumber*, дремлю; 3) тужить, *to grieve*, тужу; кричать, *to cry*, кричу; 4) водить, *to lead*, вожу; видеть, *to see*, вижу; мазать, *to anoint*, мажу; 5) платить, *to pay*, плачу; вертеть, *to turn*, верчу; плакать, *to weep*, плачу; 6) просить, *to ask*, прошу; висеть, *to be suspended*, виси; пахать, *to cultivate*, паху; 7) чистить, *to clean*, чищу; хрустеть, *to crack*, хрущу; искать, *to seek*, ищу.

3. The *third* conjugation embraces the verbs ending in the infinitive in *нутъ* and in *петь*, the first person of which is in *у* preceded by a palatal consonant (*н, р*). This conjugation is subdivided into 2 *branches*, thus:

	1st branch.	2d branch.
Infinitive:	нутъ	петь
Present:	ну	ру

Examples: 1) тянуть, *to draw*, тяну; 2) тереть, *to rub*, тру.

The three conjugations of the regular verbs and their various branches, as also the inflections of the moods, tenses and persons, are shown in the preceding table (pages 120 sq.).

56.—In the conjugation of the regular verbs the following rules relating to the formation of the various inflections are to be attended to.

Formation
of the in-
flections of
the verb.

1. The *second person* of the present is formed: a) from the first person in all the verbs of the 1st and IIId conjugation, as also in those of the IIId in *омъ*, and in *амъ* when not preceded by a hissing consonant, by changing *ю* or *ѣ* into *ешь*; b) from the infinitive in the verbs of the IIId conjugation ending in *уть*, *ѣть*, and in *амъ* preceded by a hissing consonant, by changing *уть*, *ѣть* or *амъ* into *ишь*. The other persons are formed from the second. The present has generally the following inflections:

PERSONS:	SINGULAR.			
	1.	2.	3.	4.
1.	ю ю	у у	ю ю	у у
2.	ешь ешь	ешь ешь	ишь ишь	ишь ишь
3.	еть етъ	еть етъ	итъ итъ	итъ итъ
PERSONS:	PLURAL.			
	1.	2.	3.	4.
1.	емъ емъ	емъ емъ	имъ имъ	имъ имъ
2.	ете ете	ете ете	ите ите	ите ите
3.	ютъ утъ	ютъ утъ	ятъ ятъ	ятъ (атъ)
For verbs of the I conjug. and for those in <i>омъ</i> , 1st br. and in <i>амъ</i> , 2d br. of the II conj. (See the parad. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 10 and 12.)				For verbs of the II conjug. 1st and 2d br. (except those in <i>омъ</i> and in <i>амъ</i>) (See the paradigms 8, 9, and 11.)
For verbs of the III conjug. and for those in <i>амъ</i> , 4th, 5th, 6th and 7th br. of the II conjug. (See the paradigms 15, 17, 19, 21, 22, 23, 24 and 25.)				For verbs of the II conjug., 3rd, 4th, 5th, 6th and 7th br. (except those in <i>амъ</i> not preceded by a hissing letter). (See the paradigms 13, 14, 16, 18 and 20.)

The third person of the plural ends in *амъ* (instead of *амъ*) after the hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), and this for the verbs of the third branch of the II conjugation. (See paradigm 13).

2. The *preterit* in verbs of the I st and II conjugation is formed from the infinitive by changing *тъ* into *лъ* (*fem.* *ла*, *neut.* *ло*; *plur.* *ли*). The inchoative verbs of the III conjugation syncopate the termination *нулъ* into *ъ* (*fem.* *ла*, *neut.* *ло*; *plur.* *ли*), by suppressing the consonant *л* in the masculine, when no vowel immediately precedes; e. g. *сохъ*, *вялъ* (*fem.* *сôхла*, *вѣла*, *neut.* *сôхло*, *вѣло*), instead of *сôхнулъ*, *вѣнулъ*, from *сôхнуть*, *to dry*; *вѣнуть*, *to fade*. Occasionally the full form is used: e. g. *мёрзнуть*, *to freeze*, *мёрзнулъ*; but in the inchoative prepositional verbs, the preterit is almost always syncopated, and this sometimes happens also in the aspect perfect of unity; e. g. *замёрзнуть*, *to freeze*, *замёрзъ*, *to erect*, *воздвигъ* (instead of *замёрзнулъ*,

The non-inchoative verbs, as also the perfect aspect of unity, retain the termination *нулъ*; e. g. *тянулъ*, *двинулъ*, from *тянуть*, *to draw*; *двинуть*, *to move once*. The verbs of the 2d branch of the III conjugation also syncopate the termination of the preterit. (See the paradigms 22, 23, 24 and 25.)

3. The *imperative* ends in the second person of the singular in *и*, *ь*, *и* or *й*, and is formed from the second person of

the present (or from the future, in the perfect aspect of duration or of unity), by changing *ешь* or *ишь*:

a) into *ѹ*, if the accent is on the termination of the infinitive (paradigms 8, 10, 11, 12, 15, 16, 18, 19, 21, 22);

б) into *ѵ*, if the accent is not on the termination of the infinitive (paradigms 13, 14, 17 and 24);

с) into *ѹ*, if, without having the accent, the termination of the inf. is preceded by two or three consonants (paradigms 20 & 23);

д) into *ѹ*, if the inflection *ешь* or *ишь* of the second person is preceded by a vowel (paradigms 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 and 9). The verbs in *ишь* preceded by a vowel, and with the accent on the last syllable, also take the inflection *ѹ*, e. g. тайть, *to hide*; поить, *to water*; клейть, *to paste*; imper.: тай, пой, клей.

The second person of the plural is formed by adding the syllable *те* to the inflection of the second person of the singular. The other persons have no peculiar inflection. The first person of the plural takes* that of the future; e. g. будемъ учиться, *let us study*; пойдёмъ, *let us go*, and sometimes adding the syllable *те*, пойдёмте. The third person in both numbers takes that of the present or the future, preceded by the conjunctions *пусть* or *да*, e. g. пусть говоритъ, *let him speak*; да здравствуетъ, *let him live*; да будутъ, *let them be*.

The second person singular of the imperative is sometimes used with the personal pronouns of the first and third person, in order to express the *conditional* mood; e. g. сдѣлай это я, *if I should do that*; сдѣлай это онъ, *if he were to do that*; instead of *если бы я* (or *онъ*) *это сдѣлалъ*. In the same manner the phrases: сохрани Богъ, *God preserve!* дай Богъ, *God grant!* take the place of the *optative* mood.

Rem. There are some regular verbs which deviate slightly from the general rules, undergoing a trifling change either in the 1st person of the pres., or in the imper., as we shall subsequently point out. We remark lastly that there is but one verb which has its imper. in *ѵ*; it is the irregular verb *лечь*, *to lie down*; imper.: лягъ, *pl.* лягте.

57.—Observing these different rules for the formation of the moods, tenses and persons, the active, neuter and pronominal regular Russian verbs are conjugated according to the 25 following paradigms.

Paradigms
of the con-
jugations of
regular
verbs.

PARADIGMS OF THE THREE CONJUGATIONS.

CONJUGATIONS:	PARADIGMS:	I. INFINITIVE.			II. I N I					
					I. PRESENT.					
					Singular.			Plural.		
					1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.
FIRST	1.	1.	дѣлать, to make.		дѣлаю, дѣла-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
		2.	толковать, to explain. . . .		толкую, толку-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
	2.	3.	воевать, to war		воюю, вою-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
		4.	жевать, to chew.		жую, жу-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
	3.	5.	гулять, to take a walk		гуляю, гуля-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
		6.	сеять, to sow.		сею, се-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
	4.	7.	желтѣть, to grow yellow. . . .		желтѣю, желтѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
SECOND	1.	8.	хвалить, to praise.		хваляю, хвал-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ					
		9.	строить, to build.		строю, стрѣ-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ					
	10.	10.	колѣть, to sting.		колю, кол-ишь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
		11.	любить, to love		люблю, люб-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ					
	2.	12.	дремать, to slumber.		дремлю, дремл-ишь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
	3.	13.	мучить, to torment.		мучу, муч-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ					
		14.	ладить, to tune.		лажусь, лад-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ					
	4.	15.	вязать, to tie.		вяжу, вяж-ишь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
		16.	платить, to pay.		плачу, плат-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ					
	5.	17.	плакать, to weep.		плачу, плач-ишь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
		18.	просить, to ask		прошу, прос-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ					
THIRD	1.	22.	тянуть, to draw.		тяну, тян-ишь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
		23.	сохнуть, to dry.		сохну, сохн-ишь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
		24.	вѣнуть, to fade.		вѣну, вѣн-ишь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
	2.	25.	тереть, to rub.		тру, тр-ишь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					

With respect to the use of the *tonic accent* in the conjugations of regular verbs, the following rules are to be observed.

1. The first person of the present takes the accent of the infinitive, with the exception of the verbs in *овать* and *ежать*, in which the last syllable is accented. These verbs transfer the accent on the penultima, if this termination belongs to a derivative verb; but if the syllable *ов* or *еж* belongs to the root of the verb, they preserve the accent on the last syllable; thus *толковать*, *воевать* (parad. 2 and 3) have in the present *толкую*, *воюю*; while *жевать* (parad. 4) has *жую*; and also *ковать*, *to forge*, *кую*; *плевать*, *to spit*, *плюю*. The other persons of the present preserve the accent of the first person, with the exception of several verbs of the III and III^d conjugation, accented on the last syllable, which transfer the accent on the penultima in the second and other persons of the singular and plural. (See the paradigms 8, 10, 11, 12, 15, 16, 18, 19, 21 and 22.)

GATIONS OF REGULAR VERBS.

C A T I V E.

III. IMPERATIVE.

II. PRETERIT.				III. FUTURE.		2d pers.	
Singular.			Plural.			Sing.	Plur.
я, ты, онъ (и. онѣ, f. онѣ)	<i>masc.</i>	<i>neut.</i>	<i>fem.</i>	мы, вы, они (f. онѣ)	3 genders.		
	дѣлалъ,	апо,	ала;			дѣлай.	йте.
	толковалъ,	ало,	ала;			толкуй,	ите
	воевалъ,	ало,	ала;			воюй,	ите
	жевалъ,	ало,	ала;			жуй,	ите
	гулялъ,	ало,	ала;			гуляй,	ите
я, ты, онъ (и. онѣ, f. онѣ)	сѣялъ,	ало,	ала;	мы, вы, они (f. онѣ)	3 genders.	сѣй,	ите.
	желѣлъ,	ѣло,	ѣла;			желѣй,	ите
	хвалѣлъ,	ѣло,	ѣла;			хвали,	ите
	строиѣлъ,	ило,	ила;			строй,	ите
	колѣлъ,	оло,	ола;			коли,	ите
	любѣлъ,	ило,	ила;			люби,	ите
я, ты, онъ (и. онѣ, f. онѣ)	дремаѣлъ,	ѣло,	ѣла;	мы, вы, они (f. онѣ)	3 genders.	дремли,	ите.
	мучѣлъ,	ило,	ила;			мучь	ьте.
	ладѣлъ,	ило,	ила;			ладь,	ьте
	вязаѣлъ,	ѣло,	ѣла;			вяжи,	ите
	платѣлъ,	ило,	ила;			плати,	ите
	плакаѣлъ,	ало,	ала;			плачь,	ьте
я, ты, онъ (и. онѣ, f. онѣ)	просѣлъ,	ило,	ила;	мы, вы, они (f. онѣ)	3 genders.	проси,	ите.
	писѣлъ,	ѣло,	ѣла;			пиши,	ите
	чиѣлъ,	ило,	ила;			чиѣти,	ите
	искаѣлъ,	ѣло,	ѣла;			иши,	ите
	тянуѣлъ,	ѣло,	ѣла;			тяни,	ите.
	сохѣлъ,	ило,	ила;			сохни,	ите
я, ты, онъ (и. онѣ, f. онѣ)	вѣлъ,	ѣло,	ѣла;	мы, вы, они (f. онѣ)	3 genders.	вѣнь,	ьте
	терѣлъ,	ило,	ила;			три	ите

бѣлу or стѣну (сѣмь, етъ; сѣмь, етъ) with the infinitive.

2. The preterit retains the accentuation of the infinitive, and that in all the inflections, excepted *родить*, to bring forth, *pret. родилъ, f. родила, и. родило, pl. родили*, and some verbs of the III conjugation, which, as well as the irregular verbs, follow the rules of adjectives in the apocopated termination, i. e. the accent is often transferred to the last syllable, sometimes only in the feminine gender, and at other times in the neuter and in the plural, as we shall see later.

3. The accentuation of the imperative is above indicated in the formation of this mood.

4. The pronominal verbs preserve the accentuation of the active verbs; however some of these verbs transfer the accent to the reflected pronoun *ся*, as *родилсѣ, he is born, заперсѣ, it shut itself up*; but that happens only in the masculine gender; in the feminine and neuter, as well as in the plural, the accent is placed on the syllable which precedes the pronoun (*родилась, заперлась, &c.*). This transferring happens above all in the monosyllable verbs, as *звасѣ, вѣдсѣ, далсѣ, &c.*

First conjugation.

*According to the 1st paradigm (дѣлать) are conjugated verbs in *амь*, as well simple as prepositional (with the exception of those in *оамь* and *еамь*, which belong to the three following paradigms, and of several in *амь*, which are of the second conjugation). Such are:

Болтать, to shake, *pres.* болтаю.
Вѣнчать, to crown, вѣнчаю.
Дерзать, to dare, дерзаю.
Думать, to think, думаю.
Ласкать, to caress, ласкаю.
Пытать, to assay, пытаю.
Печатать, to print, печатаю.
Работать, to work, работаю.
Питать, to nourish, питаю.
Нюхать, to smell, нюхаю.
Терзать, to worry, терзаю.
Умничать, to subtilize, умничаю.
Ужасать, to terrify, ужасаю.

Уповать, to hope, *pres.* уповаю.
Обожать, to adore, обожаю.
Отвѣчать, to answer, отвѣчаю.
Общѣать, to promise, общаю.
Отдѣлывать, to finish, отдѣлываю.
Усматривать, to perceive, усматриваю.
Закрывать, to cover, закрываю.
Надмевать, to render proud, надмеваю.
Обуревать, to agitate, обуреваю.
Отмщевать, to avenge, отмщевая.
Здороваться, to salute, здороваюсь.
Касаться, to concern, касаюсь.
Намѣряться, to purpose, -ваюсь.

Also давать, to give, as the prepositional verbs узнавать, to know; доставать, to procure (and with other prepositions) and создавать, to build, which have in the present: даю, узнаю, достаю and создаю, and in the imperative: давай, узнавай, доставай and создавай. — Some prepositional verbs in *ывать*, e. g. показывать, to show; указывать, to indicate; помазывать, to anoint; исповѣдывать, to confess, belong also to the following branch, having the present tense in *ываю* and in *ую*: показываю and показую, помазываю and помазую, &c.

According to the 2nd paradigm (толковать) are conjugated verbs in *оамь* (with the exception of *уповать* and *здороваться* which belong to the precedent paradigm), which have in the present *ую*, observing that those in *оамь* accented on the last syllable transfer the accent to *у*, if this termination belongs to a derivative verb, but they preserve it on the last syllable, if the syllable *оа* belongs to the root of the verb. Such are:

Ворковать, to coo, *pres.* воркую.
Торговать, to traffic, торгую.
Баловать, to cocker, балую.
Ковать, to forge, кую.
Сновать, to warp, сную.
Совать, to shove, сую.

Зимовать, to winter, *pres.* зимую.
Именовать, to name, именую.
Цѣловать, to kiss, цѣлую.
Рисовать, to draw, рисую.
Образовать, to form, образу.
Радовать, to rejoice, радую.

Трѣбовать, to require, *pres.* трѣбую. Привѣтствовать, to welcome, *pres.*
 Чувствовать, to feel, чувствую. привѣтствую.
 Совѣтовать, to counsel, совѣтую. Повиноваться, to obey, повинуюсь.
 Миловать, to have pity, милую.

According to the 3d paradigm (воевать) are conjugated verbs in *евать* (with the exception of those in *евать* preceded by a hissing consonant, which belong to the following paradigm, and of *надмевать*, *обуреывать*, *отмещевать* and *наимпреваться*, which belong to the first paradigm), which have in the present *юю*, with the same observation relatively to the tonic accent as for verbs in *овать*. Such are:

Горевать, to grieve, *pres.* горюю. Клевать, to peck, *pres.* клюю
 Дневать, to pass the day, дняю. Плевать, to spit, плюю.
 Утренневать, to pass the morning. Блевать, to vomit, блюю.
 Малевать, to paint, маляю. [-нюю. Пеклевать, to bolt, пеклюю.

According to the 4th paradigm (жевать) are conjugated verbs in *евать* preceded by a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), which have in the present *юю* (instead of *юю*); such are:

Врачевать, to cure, *pres.* врачюю. Тушевать, to wash a drawing, *pres.*
 Кочевать, to nomadize, кочюю. тушюю.
 Ночевать, to pass the night, ночюю. Хвощевать, to rub with horse-tail,
 Межевать, to survey, межюю. хвощюю.
 Бушевать, to howl, бушюю. Пощевать, to regale, пощюю.

This last verb is also written *пощивать*, and then it belongs to the first branch, having in the present: *пощиваю*.

According to the 5th paradigm (гулять) are conjugated all the verbs in *ать* preceded by a consonant, as well simple as prepositional, and also four simple verbs in *ать* preceded by a vowel, and some prepositional verbs in *оать*, in which *ать* is contracted from *ивать*. These verbs have the present in *аю*. Such are:

Валать, to roll, *pres.* валаю. Утолять, to quench, *pres.* утоляю
 Вонять, to stink, воняю. Извинять, to excuse, извиняю
 Кашлять, to cough, кашляю. Повѣрять, to verify, повѣряю.
 Мѣнять, to change, мѣняю. Утомлять, to fatigue, утомляю
 Козырять, to trump, козыряю. Ваять, to sculpture, ваяю.
 Кривлять, to contort, кривляю. Злать, to gape, зляю
 Терять, to lose, теряю. Паять, to solder, паюю.
 Стрѣлять, to shoot, стрѣляю. Слать, to shine, слаю
 Являть, to show, являю. Устроить, to arrange, устраюю.
 Кланяться, to salute, кланяюсь. Удвоить, to double, удваюю.

*According to the 6th paradigm (**сѣять**) are conjugated verbs in **ять** preceded by a vowel (with the exception of those which belong to the precedent paradigm, and of **стоять** and **бояться**, which belong to the first branch of the II d conjugation). They have the present in **ю**; such are:

Бѣять , to speak, <i>pres.</i> бѣю	Таять , to thaw, <i>pres.</i> таяю
Блѣять , to bleach, блѣю	Чаять , to hope, чаяю
Вопѣять , to cry, вопѣю	Чуять , to hear, чую
Вѣять , to blow, вѣю	Каяться , to do penance, каюсь
Граять , to croak, граю	Маяться , to languish, маюсь
Лелѣять , to dandle, лелѣю	Смѣяться , to laugh, смѣюсь.

According to the 7th paradigm (**желѣть**) are conjugated the inchoative and some other verbs in **ѣть**, which have the present in **ю**, (the non-inchoative in **ѣть** belong to the various branches of the second conjugation). Such are:

Бѣлѣть , to grow white, <i>pres.</i> бѣлѣю	Рыжѣть , to grow rufous, <i>pres.</i> рыжѣю
Голубѣть , to become azure, голубѣю	Грубѣть , to grow harsh, грубѣю
Соловѣть , to grow light bay, соловѣю	Чернѣть , to grow black, чернѣю
Рябѣть , to become freckled, рябѣю	Погѣть , to sweat, потѣю
Краснѣть , to grow red, краснѣю	Пламенѣть , to flame, пламенѣю
Владѣть , to possess, владѣю	Колѣть , to starve, колѣю
Глазѣть , to gaze, глазѣю	Коснѣть , to linger, коснѣю
Говѣть , to keep fast, говѣю	Печалѣть , to impress, печалѣю
Долѣть , to overcome, долѣю	Имѣть , to have, имѣю
Жалѣть , to have pity, жалѣю	Умѣть , to know, умѣю
Синѣть , to grow blue, синѣю	Радѣть , to take care, радѣю
Сѣдѣть , to grow grey, сѣдѣю	Болѣть , to ache, болѣю.

The verb **болѣть** belongs also to the first branch of the II d conjugation, having in the present **болѣю** and **болѣю**, **болѣешь** and **болишь**, &c. — The prepositional verb **выздоровѣть**, to recover (perfect aspect of **выздоравливать**), belongs also to the second branch of the II d conjugation, having in the future **выздоровѣю** and **выздоровлю**, but only in the first person, the others being: **выздоровѣешь**, **еть**, &c.

Second conjugation. According to the 8th paradigm (**хвалить**) are conjugated verbs in **ить** preceded by a palatal consonant (**л, н, р**), and also by another consonant, as those, non-inchoative, in **лѣть**, **нѣть**, **рѣть**, observing that several verbs of the second conjugation, accented in the infinitive and in the first person of the present on the last syllable, transfer the accent to the penultima in the second and other persons of the present. Such are:

Бранить, to scold, <i>pres.</i> браню, бранишь.	Коймить, to edge, <i>pres.</i> коймю, -ишь
Веселить, to divert, веселю, веселишь.	Клеймить, to stamp, клеймю, -ишь.
Винить, to accuse, виню, винишь.	Гудить, to fiddle, гудю, гудишь.
Вѣрить, to believe, вѣрю, вѣришь.	Дудить, to pipe, дудю, дудишь.
Говорить, to speak, говорю, говоришь.	Мерзѣть, to abhor, мерзю, мерзѣишь
Смолѣть, to pitch, смолю, смолишь.	Тузѣть, to stuff, тузю, тузишь.
Дѣлить, to divide, дѣлю, дѣлишь.	Кудѣсѣть, to juggle, кудѣсю, кудѣсѣишь.
Скоблить, to scrape, скоблю, скоблишь.	Чудѣсѣть, to behave oddly, чудѣсю, чудѣсѣишь.
Дразнить, to provoke, дразню, дразнишь.	Велѣть, to order, велю, велишь
Хоронить, to hide, хороню, хоронишь	Горѣть, to burn, горю, горѣишь
Курить, to smoke, курю, куришь	Звенѣть, to sound, звеню, звенишь.
Варить, to boil, варю, варишь	Смотрѣть, to look, смотрю, смотришь.

And also *мыслить*, to think, which changes *c* into *ш* in the first person of the present: *мышлю*, *мыслишь*, &c.: *imperative*: *мысли*; and the prepositional verb *изострить*, to sharpen (perfect aspect of *изощрѣть*), which changes *ст* into *ш* in the first person of the future: *изощрю*, *изостришь*, &c.

According to the 9th paradigm (*стрѣбить*) are conjugated verbs in *ить* preceded by a vowel, as the two simple verbs in *оить*, observing that the verbs in *ить* of this branch, accented on the last syllable, have the imperative in *и*. Such are:

Двойть, to double, <i>pres.</i> двояю; <i>imp.</i> , двой	Стоять, to cost, <i>pres.</i> стою; <i>imp.</i> стой.
Доить, to milk, дою; дой	Своить, to appropriate, свою; свой
Клейть, to glue, клею; клей.	Поконить, to give repose, покою; поконй
Поить, to give to drink, пою; пой.	Ройться, to swarm, рою; роися.
Кроить, to cut, крою; крой	Стайться, to fly in flocks, стаюсь; стайся.
Струить, to pour, струю; струй.	Бойться, to fear, боюсь; бойся.
Тайть, to hide, таю; тай.	Стоять, to stand, стою; стой.

According to the 10th paradigm (*колѣть*) are conjugated verbs in *оть*, as two verbs in *ать*; these are:

Борѣть, to vanquish, <i>pres.</i> борю, борѣишь.	Порѣть, to rip, <i>pres.</i> порю, порѣишь
Борѣться, to wrestle, борюсь, борѣишься.	Глаголѣть, to say, глаголю, глаголюсь
Полѣть, to weed, полю, полѣишь.	Орѣть, to plough, орю, орѣишь.

And also *молѣть*, to grind, which has in the present: *мелю*, &c. and in the imperative *мели* (instead of *молю*, *молѣи*, not to be confounded with *молю*, *молѣишь*,

МОЛѢ, from МОЛѢТЬ, *to pray*). — The verb ОРАТЬ in the sense of *to cry* belongs to the third conjugation.

According to the 11th paradigm (ЛЮБИТЬ) are conjugated verbs in *имѣ* preceded by a labial consonant (б, в, м, п, ф), as the non-inchoatives in-бѢТЬ, мѢТЬ, пѢТЬ, which insert the consonant *л* in the first person of the present (with the exception of *клеѣмѢТЬ* and *коймѢТЬ*, which belong to the first branch of the II^d conjugation, of *имѣТЬ* and *умѣТЬ*, which belong to the 4th branch of the Ist conjugation, and of *шибѣТЬ*, which belongs to the first branch of the III^d conjugation). Such are:

РубѣТЬ, to hew, <i>pres.</i> рублю, рубишь	РѣзѣТЬся, to sport, <i>pres.</i> рѣзвлюсь, рѣзвѣишься
ЗабѣТЬ, to chill, заблю, зобишь.	СкорбѣТЬ, to sorrow, скорблю, робишь.
ГрубѣТЬ, to be saucy, грублю, грубишь	СвербѣТЬ, to itch, сверблю, свербишь
ЛовѣТЬ, to catch, ловлю, ловишь	ГремѣТЬ, to thunder, гремлю, гремишь.
ГотовѣТЬ, to prepare, готовлю, готовишь.	ШумѣТЬ, to racket, шумлю, шумишь.
ДымѣТЬ, to smoke, дымлю, дымишь.	КипѣТЬ, to boil, киплю, кипишь.
КормѣТЬ, to nourish, кормлю, кормишь	КорпѣТЬ, to work, корплю, корпишь
ТопѣТЬ, to heat, топлю, топишь.	СопѣТЬ, to wheeze, соплю, сопишь.
ЛѣпѣТЬ, to mould, лѣплю, лѣпишь.	СкрипѣТЬ, to creak, скриплю, скрипишь.
ГраѣТЬ, to rule, граблю, грабишь	ТерпѣТЬ, to suffer, терплю, терпишь.
ТраѣТЬ, to hit, траблю, трафишь	ХрапѣТЬ, to snore, храплю, храпишь
НравѣТЬся, to please, нравлюсь, нравѣишься.	ХрипѣТЬ, to croak, хриплю, хрипишь.
	ШипѣТЬ, to hiss, шиплю, шипишь.

And also the prepositional verb| умертвѣТЬ, *to put to death* (perfect aspect of *умерщвлѣТЬ*), which changes *т* into *ц* in the first person of the future: умерщвлю, умертвишь, &c.

According to the 12th paradigm (ДРЕМАТЬ) are conjugated verbs in *бѣТЬ, мѣТЬ, пѣТЬ*, which insert also the consonant *л* in the first person of the present, and retain it in the other persons as in all the inflections derivated from this first person. These are:

ЗыбѣТЬ, to wave, <i>pres.</i> зыблю, зыблешь.	And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation. [зобаю.
КолѣбѣТЬ, to shake, колеблю, колѣблешь.	ЗобѣТЬ, to peck up, <i>pres.</i> зоблю and
КлепѣТЬ, to impute, клеплю, клеплешь.	КапѣТЬ, to drop, каплю and капаю.
ТрепѣТЬ, to scutch, треплю, треплешь.	КрапѣТЬ, to dash, краплю and крапаю.
ЩепѣТЬ, to chip, щеплю, щеплешь.	ХромѣТЬ, to be lame, хромлю and хромаю.
ЩипѣТЬ, to pinch, щиплю, щиплешь.	
СыпѣТЬ, to strew, сыплю, сыплешь (<i>imper.</i> сыпь, instead of <i>сыплѣ</i>).	

And also *имать*, to take, which now is used only with a preposition, as *принимать*, to receive, *pres.* *пріѣмлю* and *принимая*, and with other prepositions.

According to the 13th paradigm (*мѣчить*) are conjugated verbs in *ить* and *ать* with a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), as one verb in *ить* (with the exception of the verbs in *ать*, which belong in the first conjugation). Such are:

<i>Нѣжить</i> , to nurse, <i>pres.</i> <i>нѣжу</i> , <i>нѣ- жись.</i> [<i>дружись.</i>	<i>Сушить</i> , to dry, <i>pres.</i> <i>сушу</i> , <i>сүшишь.</i>
<i>Дружить</i> , to make friends, <i>дружѹ</i> , <i>дѣ- ручась.</i>	<i>Лежать</i> , to lie, <i>лежѹ</i> , <i>лежишь.</i>
<i>Кѣрчить</i> , to shrivel, <i>кѣрчу</i> , <i>кѣрчишь.</i>	<i>Держать</i> , to hold, <i>держѹ</i> , <i>держишь.</i>
<i>Страшить</i> , to frighten, <i>страшу</i> , <i>стра- шаешь.</i>	<i>Кричать</i> , to cry, <i>кричѹ</i> , <i>кричишь.</i>
<i>Вощить</i> , to wax, <i>вощу</i> , <i>вощишь.</i>	<i>Молчать</i> , to be silent, <i>молчѹ</i> , <i>молчишь.</i>
<i>Лощить</i> , to gloss, <i>лощу</i> , <i>лощишь.</i>	<i>Стучать</i> , to knock, <i>стучѹ</i> , <i>стучишь.</i>
<i>Служить</i> , to serve, <i>служѹ</i> , <i>служишь.</i>	<i>Пышать</i> , to burn, <i>пышѹ</i> , <i>пышишь.</i>
<i>Лечить</i> , to cure, <i>лечѹ</i> , <i>лечишь.</i>	<i>Дышать</i> , to breathe, <i>дышѹ</i> , <i>дышишь.</i>
<i>Учить</i> , to teach, <i>учѹ</i> , <i>учишь.</i>	<i>Пнищать</i> , to pipe, <i>пнищѹ</i> , <i>пничишь.</i>
	<i>Трещать</i> , to burst, <i>трещѹ</i> , <i>трещишь.</i>
	<i>Квасить</i> , to swarm, <i>квашѹ</i> , <i>квасишь.</i>

According to the 14th paradigm (*лѣдить*) are conjugated verbs in *ить* and *зуть*, as well as the non-inchoatives in *дѣть* (with the exception of *гудѣть*, *дудѣть*, *мерзѣть*, *тузѣть* and some others, which belong to the first branch of this second conjugation); these verbs change *д* and *з* into *ж* in the first person of the present. Some verbs in *дѣть* have retained the Slavonian change of *д* into *жд* in the first person of the present. Such are:

<i>Вредѣть</i> , to hurt, <i>pres.</i> <i>врежѹ</i> , <i>вре- дишь.</i>	<i>Узѣть</i> , to narrow, <i>pres.</i> <i>ужѹ</i> , <i>ѹзишь.</i>
<i>Глѣдить</i> , to even, <i>глѣжу</i> , <i>глѣдишь.</i>	<i>Морозѣть</i> , to freeze, <i>морѣжу</i> , <i>морѣ- зишь.</i>
<i>Щадѣть</i> , to spare, <i>щадѹ</i> , <i>щадѣшь.</i>	<i>Возѣть</i> , to carry, <i>вожѹ</i> , <i>возишь.</i>
<i>Родѣть</i> , to bring forth, <i>рожѹ</i> , <i>родишь.</i>	<i>Видѣть</i> , to see, <i>вижѹ</i> , (<i>impr.</i> <i>видѣ</i> and <i>виждѣ</i>).
<i>Лудѣть</i> , to tin, <i>лужѹ</i> , <i>лудишь.</i>	<i>Глядѣть</i> , to look, <i>гляжѹ</i> , <i>глядѣшь.</i>
<i>Нудѣть</i> , to compel, <i>нужѹ</i> , <i>нудишь.</i>	<i>Сидѣть</i> , to sit, <i>сижѹ</i> , <i>сидѣшь.</i>
<i>Будѣть</i> , to waken, <i>бужѹ</i> , <i>будишь.</i>	<i>Смердѣть</i> , to stink, <i>смержѹ</i> , <i>смер- дишь.</i>
<i>Водѣть</i> , to lead, <i>вожѹ</i> , <i>водишь.</i>	<i>Убѣдѣть</i> , to persuade, <i>ful.</i> <i>убѣждѹ</i> , <i>убѣдишь.</i>
<i>Сердѣть</i> , to anger, <i>сержѹ</i> , <i>сѣрдишь.</i>	<i>Наградѣть</i> , to reward, <i>награждѹ</i> , <i>наградѣшь.</i>
<i>Судѣть</i> , to judge, <i>сужѹ</i> , <i>судишь.</i>	<i>Возбудѣть</i> , to excite, <i>возбуждѹ</i> , <i>возбудишь.</i> [<i>упреждашь.</i>
<i>Ходѣть</i> , to go, <i>хожѹ</i> , <i>ходишь.</i>	<i>Упредѣть</i> , to prevent, <i>упреждѹ</i> ,
<i>Грузѣть</i> , to lade, <i>грузѹ</i> , <i>грузишь.</i>	
<i>Близѣть</i> , to approach, <i>ближѹ</i> , <i>бли- зись.</i>	
<i>Грозѣть</i> , to menace, <i>грожу</i> , <i>грозишь.</i>	
<i>Низѣть</i> , to lower, <i>нижѹ</i> , <i>низишь.</i>	

According to the 15th paradigm (вѣзѣть) are conjugated some verbs in *зѣть*, *гѣть* and *дѣть*, which change *з*, *г* and *д* into *ж* for all the persons of the present, as well as for the inflections formed from this tense. These are:

Мѣзѣть, to anoint, *pres.* мажу́, мажешь.

Рѣзѣть, to cut, рѣжу́, рѣжешь.

Кѣзѣть, to show, кажѣ́у, кажешься.

Кѣзѣться, to seem, кажѣ́сь, кажешься.

Нѣзѣть, to thread, нѣжу́, нѣжешь.

Лѣзѣть, to lick, лижу́, лижешь.

Брызѣть, to splash, брызжу́, брызжешь.

Глодѣть, to gnaw, *pres.* гложу́, глодешь.

And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st br. of 1st. conjug.

Двѣгѣть, to move, двѣжу́ and двѣгаю.

Тѣгѣть, to be at law, тѣжѣ́сь and тѣгаю́сь.

Стругѣть, to plane, стружу́ and строгаю (instead of *стругаю*).

According to the 16th paradigm (плѣтитъ) are conjugated verbs in *тѣть*, as well as the non-inchoatives in *тѣть* (with the exception of some verbs in *тѣть* which belong to the 20th paradigm), which change *т* into *ч* in the first person of the present. Such are:

Вѣтѣть, to screw, *pres.* вѣчу́, вѣтишь.

Золотѣть, to gild, золочу́, золотишь.

Забѣтѣть, to busy, забѣчу́, забѣтишь.

Порѣтѣть, to spoil, порѣчу́, порѣтишь.

Мутѣть, to muddy, мутчу́, мутѣтишь.

Крутѣть, to twist, кручу́, крутишь.

Мѣтѣть, to aim, мѣчу́, мѣтишь.

Тратѣть, to spend, тратчу́, трѣтишь.

Катѣть, to roll, *pres.* качѣ́у, катѣшь.

Молотѣть, to thrash, молочѣ́у, молотишь.

Свѣтѣть, to light, свѣчу́, свѣтишь.

Шутѣть, to joke, шучѣ́у, шѣтишь.

Колотѣть, to knock, колочѣ́у, колѣтишь.

Вертѣть, to turn, верѣчу́, верѣтишь.

Летѣть, to fly, летѣ́чу, летѣишь.

Пыхтѣть, to puff, пыхѣ́чу, пыхѣишь.

According to the 17th paradigm (плѣкѣть) are conjugated several verbs in *тѣть* and *кѣть*, which change *т* and *к* into *ч* for all the persons of the present, and for the inflections formed from this tense. Such are.

Прѣтѣть, to hide, *pres.* прѣчу́, прѣчешь [бормѣчешь.

Бормотѣть, to murmur, бормочѣ́у, бормѣчешь.

Лѣпетѣть, to chatter, лепечѣ́у, лепѣчешь.

Топтѣть, to tread town, топѣ́чу, топѣчешь. [пѣчешь.

Хлопотѣть, to bustle, хлопѣ́чу, хлопѣчешь.

Хохотѣть, to laugh aloud, хохѣ́чу, хохѣчешь.

Шептѣть, to whisper, шепѣ́чу, шепѣчешь.

Щекотѣть, to tickle, щечѣ́чу, щечѣчешь.

Кудѣхтѣть, to cackle, *pres.* кудѣ́хчу, кудѣхчешь.

Клѣкѣть, to call, клѣ́чу, клѣчешь.

Скакѣть, to leap, скаѣ́чу, скаѣчешь.

Тѣкѣть, to thirst, тѣ́чу, тѣчешь.

And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.

Алѣкѣть, to long, алѣ́чу and алѣкаю.

Икѣть, to hiccup, иѣ́чу and иѣкаю.

Хнѣкѣть, to sob, хнѣ́чу and хнѣкаю.

Метѣть, to cast, метѣ́чу and метѣаю.

According to the 18th paradigm (просить) are conjugated verbs in *суть* (with the exception of *кудѣсуть* and *чудѣсуть* which belong to the first branch of the II d conjugation), and also one non-inchoative in *стѣть*, which change *с* into *ш* in the first person of the present. Such are:

Вѣсѣть, to black, <i>pres.</i> вѣкшу, вѣкшишь.	Трусѣть, to be afraid, <i>pres.</i> трушу, трусишь.
Вѣсить, to weigh, вѣшу, вѣсишь.	Росѣть, to bedew, рошу, росишь.
Квѣсѣть, to leaven, квѣшу, квѣсишь.	Гасѣть, to put out, гашу, гасишь.
Красѣть, to colour, красу, красяшь.	Мѣсѣть, to knead, мѣшу, мѣсишь.
Косѣть, to mow, кошу, косишь.	Носѣть, to bear, ношу, носишь.
Бѣсѣть, to madden, бѣшу, бѣсишь.	Висѣть, to hang, вишу, висишь.

According to the 19th paradigm (писѣть) are conjugated some verbs in *сѣть* and *хѣть*, which change *с* and *х* into *ш* for all the persons of the present, as well as for the inflections formed of this tense. These are:

Плясѣть, to dance, <i>pres.</i> пляшѹ, пляшешь.	And thus the two following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.
Поѣсѣть, to gird, поѣшу, поѣшешь.	Колыхѣть, to swing, <i>pres.</i> колышу and колыхаю.
Тесѣть, to hew, тешѹ, тешешь.	Махѣть, to fan, машѹ, машешь and махаю
Чесѣть, to comb, чешѹ, чешешь.	
Брехѣть, to yelp, брешѹ, брешешь.	
Пахѣть, to plough, пашѹ, пашешь	

According to the 20th paradigm (чистить) are conjugated verbs in *стѣть* and the non-inchoatives in *стѣтъ*, which change *ст* into *ш* in the first person of the present. Some verbs in *тѣть*, which have retained the Slavonian change of *т* into *ш*, belong also to this paradigm. Such are:

Грустѣть, to grieve, <i>pres.</i> грущу, грустишь.	Претѣть, to forbid, <i>pres.</i> прещѹ, претишь
Гостѣть, to visit, гощу, гостишь	Святѣть, to sanctify, свящѹ, святяшь
Крестѣть, to christen, крещѹ, крѣстишь.	Сытѣть, to satiate, сыщѹ, сытишь
Мостѣть, to floor, мощу, мостяшь	Хятѣть, to ravish, хищѹ, хятишь.
Честѣть, to treat, чешѹ, честишь.	Посвѣтъ, to visit, <i>fut.</i> посвѣщѹ, посвѣтишь.
Блестѣть, to shine, блещѹ, блестяшь	Укротѣть, to appease, укрощу, кро-тишь
Свистѣть, to whistle, свищѹ, свистяшь.	Сократѣть, to shorten, сокращѹ, сократишь.
Хрустѣть, to cranch, хрущѹ, -стишь.	Просвѣтъ, to enlighten, просвѣщѹ, просвѣстишь.
Простѣть, to pardon, <i>fut.</i> прощу, [стишь	Возвратѣть, to return, возвращѹ, -стишь.
Пустѣть, to let go, <i>fut.</i> пущѹ, пу-богатишь.	
Богатѣть, to enrich, <i>pres.</i> богащѹ, бо-гатишь.	

The verbs *простить*, *пустить*, *посвятить** and following, are the perfect aspects of *прощать*, *пускать*, *посвящать*, *укрошать*, *сокращать*, *просвещать*, *возвращать*; thus the inflections *прощу*, *пущу*, *посвещу*, *укрощу*, &c., are future tenses.

According to the 21st paradigm (*искать*) are conjugated some verbs in *скать* and *стать*, as well as four verbs in *тать*, which change *ск* and *ст*, or *т*, into *щ* for all the persons of the present, and for the inflections formed of this tense. These are:

Плескать, to splash, <i>pres.</i> плещу, плещешь	Скрежетать, to gnash, <i>pres.</i> скрежещу, скрежешься
Рыскать, to run, <i>рыщу</i> , <i>рыщешь</i>	Трепетать, to tremble, <i>трепещу</i> , <i>трепещешь</i>
Полоскать, to rinse, <i>полощу</i> , <i>полосчешь</i>	
Свистать, to whistle, <i>свищу</i> , <i>свищешь</i>	And thus the two following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.
Хлестать, to lash, <i>хлещу</i> , <i>хлещешь</i>	Блестать, shine, <i>блещу</i> , <i>блещешь</i> and
Хвостать, to brush, <i>хвощу</i> , <i>хвощешь</i>	блестая
Клеветать, to slander, <i>клеветщу</i> , <i>клеветешь</i>	Прыскать, to sprinkle, <i>прыщу</i> and
Роптать, to murmur, <i>ропщу</i> , <i>ропщешь</i>	прыскаю

Third conjugation.

According to the 22d paradigm (*тянуть*) are conjugated verbs in *нуть*, as well as four verbs in *ать* and one in *ять*, which have in the present *у*, observing that some of these verbs, accented on the last syllable in the first person of the present, transfer the accent to the penultima in the second and other persons of the present. The perfect aspect of unity belongs also to this paradigm, but the form *ну* of these verbs is a future tense. Such are:

Тонуть, to sink, <i>pres.</i> тону, <i>тонешь</i>	Кинуть, to cast, <i>fut.</i> кину, <i>кинешь</i>
Рябнуть, to be crazed, <i>ряхнусь</i> , <i>ряхнешься</i>	Вернуть, to turn, <i>верну</i> , <i>вернешь</i>
Жаждасть, to desire, <i>жажду</i> , <i>жаждешь</i>	Свистнуть, to whistle, <i>свистну</i> , <i>свистнешь</i>
Орать, to cry, <i>ору</i> , <i>орешь</i>	Граться, to thunder, <i>граю</i> , <i>граешь</i>
Сосать, to suck, <i>сосу</i> , <i>сосешь</i>	Глянуть, to look, <i>гляну</i> , <i>глянешь</i>
Скнаться, to groan, <i>сконю</i> , <i>сконешь</i>	Двинуть, to move, <i>двину</i> , <i>двинешь</i>
Ревять, to roar, <i>реву</i> , <i>реветь</i>	Обмануть, to cheat, <i>обману</i> , <i>обманешь</i>

The verb *стонать* belongs also to the first branch of the 1st conjugation, having in the present: *стону*, *стои́нешь*, and *стонаю*, *стона́ешь*, &c. The verb *орать*, in the sense of *to plough*, belongs to the first branch of the 11d conjugation.

According to the 23d and 24th paradigms (сѡхнѹть and вѣхнѹть) are conjugated the inchoative verbs in *хѹтъ*, which in the preterit syncopate the termination *хѹлѣ* in *ѣ* if this termination is preceded by a consonant, and in *лѣ* if it is preceded by a vowel (neut. *лѣ*, fem. *лѣ*). Such are:

Блѣхнѹть, to fade, <i>pret</i> блѣхѣ, <i>мѣлѣ</i> , <i>кѣлѣ</i>	Пѣхнѹть, to smell, <i>pres</i> пѣхѣ, <i>хѣлѣ</i> , <i>хѣлѣ</i>
Зѣхнѹть, to freeze, <i>зѣлѣ</i> , <i>бѣлѣ</i> , <i>бѣлѣ</i>	Мѣхнѹть, to grow wet, <i>мѣхѣ</i> , <i>кѣлѣ</i> , <i>кѣлѣ</i>
Кѣхнѹть, to turn sour, <i>кѣсѣ</i> , <i>сѣлѣ</i> , <i>сѣлѣ</i>	Вѣхнѹть, to sink in, <i>вѣзѣ</i> , <i>зѣлѣ</i> , <i>зѣлѣ</i>
Мѣрзхнѹть, to freeze, <i>мѣрзѣ</i> , <i>зѣлѣ</i> , <i>зѣлѣ</i>	Гѣхнѹть, to go out, <i>гѣсѣ</i> , <i>сѣлѣ</i> , <i>сѣлѣ</i>
Гѣхнѹть, to perish, <i>гѣбѣ</i> , <i>бѣлѣ</i> , <i>бѣлѣ</i>	Тѣхнѹть, to grow still, <i>тѣхѣ</i> , <i>хѣлѣ</i> , <i>хѣлѣ</i>
Дѣхнѹть, to die, <i>дѣхѣ</i> , <i>хѣлѣ</i> , <i>хѣлѣ</i>	Сѣхнѹть, to cool, <i>сѣхѣ</i> , <i>лѣ</i> , <i>лѣ</i>

And also the prepositional verb *ушибѣть*, to *contuse* (and with other prepositions, perfect aspect of *ушибѣть*), which has in the future *ушибѣу*, *ушибѣешь*, and in the preterit *ушибѣ*, *ушибѣло*, *ушибѣла*, &c.

According to the 25th paradigm (терѣть) are conjugated verbs in *ерѣть*, which have in the present *ру*, and which syncopate also the preterit, observing that *мерѣть* and *перѣть* transfer in the feminine gender of the preterit the accent to the last syllable. These are:

ѣ, to die, *pres* *мру*, *мрѣшь*; *pret* *мѣрѣ*, *мѣрѣла*, *мѣлѣ*; *мѣлѣ*
Перѣть, to press, — *пру*, *прѣшь*; — *пѣрѣ*, *пѣрѣла*, *пѣлѣ*, *пѣлѣ*.

And also the verb *стерѣть*, *pres.* *стру*, *стрѣшь*; *pret.* *стѣрѣ*, *ла*, *лѣлѣ*, which now is used only with a preposition, as: *простѣрѣть*, *распростѣрѣть*, to *extend*.

58.—The irregular verbs of the Russian language are divided into three classes: 1) the monosyllabic verbs in *мѣ* preceded by a vowel; 2) some dissyllabic verbs in *мѣ*, which in some inflections do not follow the general rules of the conjugation, and 3) the verbs with an irregular termination (in *змѣ*, *смѣ*, *чѣ*, *му* and *ѹ*), as is seen in the following table.

Among the monosyllabic verbs there are some which are regular and conjugated according to the paradigms of conjugations. These are:

(See page 142.)

CONJUGATION OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

I. INFINITIVE.		II. INDICATIVE.				III. IMPERATIVE.		Passive participle.
1. Imperfect (or perfect) aspect.	2. Iterative aspect.	1. PRESENT (or FUTURE).		2. PRETERIT.		2d pers.	Full termination.	
		Singular.	Plural.	Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.	
I. MONOSYLLABIC VERBS.								
Бръѣть, to shave	бръѣвать	бръѣю, бръѣю		бръѣть, бръѣть	бръѣа, бръѣа	бръѣ, бръѣ	бръѣа, бръѣа	бръѣтый.
Дуть, to blow	дуть	дую, дую		дуть, дуть	дута, дута	дуй, дуй	дуйа, дуйа	дутый.
Ума (обуть), to put shoes	умаа	ую, ую	у	ума, ума	уа, уа	уми, уме	умиа, умиа	умый.
Пѣть, to sing	пѣвать	пою, пою		пѣть, пѣть	пѣа, пѣа	пой, пою	пойа, поюа	пѣтый.
Вѣть, to howl	—	вюю, вю		вѣть, вѣть	вѣа, вѣа	вѣи, вѣе	вѣиа, вѣеа	—
Кръѣть, to cover	крѣвать	крюю, крү		крѣть, крѣть	крѣа, крѣа	крѣи, крѣе	крѣиа, крѣеа	крѣтый.
Мыть, to wash	мыть	мою, мо		мыть, мыть	мыа, мыа	мой, мые	мойа, мыеа	мытый.
Нѣть, to grieve	нѣвать	нюю, ню		нѣть, нѣть	нѣа, нѣа	ноу, нѣе	ноуа, нѣеа	—
Рѣть, to dig	рѣвать	рюю, рю	р	рѣть, рѣть	рѣа, рѣа	роу, нѣе	роуа, нѣеа	рѣтый.
Гнѣть, to putrefy	гнѣвать	гнуо, гни		гнѣть, гнѣть	гнѣа, гнѣа	гнуи, нѣе	гнуиа, нѣеа	—
Бѣть, to beat	бѣвать	бюю, бю		бѣть, бѣть	бѣа, бѣа	боу, нѣе	боуа, нѣеа	бѣтый.
Шѣть, to sew	шѣвать	шюю, шю		шѣть, шѣть	шѣа, шѣа	шей, нѣе	шейа, нѣеа	шѣтый.
Вѣть, to twine	вѣвать	вюю, вю		вѣть, вѣть	вѣа, вѣа	воу, нѣе	воуа, нѣеа	вѣтый.
Лѣть, to pour	лѣвать	люю, лю		лѣть, лѣть	лѣа, лѣа	леу, нѣе	леуа, нѣеа	лѣтый.
Пѣть, to drink	пѣвать	пюю, пю		пѣть, пѣть	пѣа, пѣа	поу, нѣе	поуа, нѣеа	пѣтый.
Жѣть (ложѣть), to repose	—	жюю, жи		жѣть, жѣть	жѣа, жѣа	жиу, нѣе	жиуа, нѣеа	—
Жѣть, to live	жѣвать	жюю, жи	жив	жѣть, жѣть	жѣа, жѣа	жиу, нѣе	жиуа, нѣеа	(жи) живый.
Плѣть, to navigate	плѣвать	плюю, плы		плѣть, плѣть	плѣа, плѣа	плѣи, нѣе	плѣиа, нѣеа	—
Слѣть, to be reputed	слѣвать	слюю, слы		слѣть, слѣть	слѣа, слѣа	слѣи, нѣе	слѣиа, нѣеа	—
Стѣть, to grow cold	стѣвать	стюю, стѣ		стѣть, стѣть	стѣа, стѣа	стоу, нѣе	стоуа, нѣеа	—
Зѣть, to build	зѣвать	зюю, зѣ	зѣ	зѣть, зѣть	зѣа, зѣа	зѣи, нѣе	зѣиа, нѣеа	зѣтый.

I. MONOSYLLABIC VERBS.

[illegible]

2. DISSYLLABIC VERBS.

Възвѣтъ, to ride	. . . . .	възвѣтъ, ѡбѣтъ,	възвѣтъ, ѡбѣтъ,	възвѣтъ, ѡбѣтъ,	(возвѣтъ, ѡбѣтъ)
Возвѣтъ, to run	. . . . .	възвѣтъ, ѡбѣтъ,	възвѣтъ, ѡбѣтъ,	възвѣтъ, ѡбѣтъ,	възвѣтъ, ѡбѣтъ,
Возвѣтъ, to will	. . . . .	възвѣтъ, ѡбѣтъ,	възвѣтъ, ѡбѣтъ,	възвѣтъ, ѡбѣтъ,	възвѣтъ, ѡбѣтъ,

Знать, to know, I 1, <i>pres</i> знаю, знаешь	Тмить, to darken, II 1, <i>pres</i> тмю
Пхать, to push, — пхаю	Вдѣть, to wake, — вдю
Чкать, to clash, — чкаю	Зрѣть, to see, — зрю
Грѣть, to warm, I 4, <i>pres</i> грю	Мжнѣть, to twinkle, II 3 <i>pres</i> мжу, мжнѣшь
Зрѣть, to ripen, — зрю	Мшнѣть, to cover with moss, — мшу
Млѣть, to be stupified, — млѣю	Тщнѣть, to endeavour, — тщу
Прѣть, to stew, — прѣю	Мчать, to hurry, — мчу
Рдѣть, to redden, — рдѣю	Нашнѣть (pronznѣть), to pierce, II 4, <i>pres</i> -нжу, нзнѣшь
Смѣть, to dare, — смѣю	Льстѣть, to flatter, II 7, <i>pres</i> льщу, льстнѣшь
Спѣть, to ripen, — спѣю	Мстѣть, to avenge, — мщу, мстнѣшь
Тлѣть, to rot, — тлѣю	Гнѣть, to bend, III 1 <i>pres</i> гну, гнѣшь
Длѣть, to prolong, II 1, <i>pres</i> длю, длнѣшь	Лгнушѣть, to snick, — лгну
Дмѣть, to swell, — дмю	Мзгнушѣть, to turn sour, — мзгну
Злѣть, to irritate, — злѣю	Мкнушѣть, to shut, — мкну
Мнѣть, to think, — мнѣю	Снушѣть, to fall asleep, — сну
Снѣть, to dream, <i>impers</i> снѣтся	
Тлѣть, to corrupt, — тлѣю, тлнѣшь	

The preceding table of irregular verbs gives also the *iterative aspect* and the *passive participle*, inflections which in these verbs do not follow always the general rules of the formation

Delineation
of verbs.

59.—The property of the Russian verbs to have more or less aspects, is named their *delineation* (начертаніе), and depends as well upon their exterior form as upon their meaning. With this relation the verbs, as is above mentioned (§ 50), are *simple* (простые) or *prepositional* (предложные).

1. The *simple* verbs, which are without a preposition, can be *complete* (полные), *double* (сугубые), *incomplete* (неполные) and *defective* (недостаточные). The *complete* simple verbs are those which designate a physical action of men or animals, as кидать, to throw, плевать, to spit. The *double* simple verbs are those which express the movement of an acting object, as идти and ходить, to go, нести and носить, to bring. The *incomplete* and *defective* simple verbs are those which are not included in

the two preceding subdivisions, as *дѣлать*, to make; *имѣть*, to have.

2. The *prepositional* verbs, which are formed with any preposition, are subdivided, relatively to their delineation, according as they are derivated from the incomplete, defective, complete or double simple verbs.—In general the delineation of the Russian verbs, as well simple as prepositional, is seen in the following table.

DELINEATION OF VERBS.

I. SIMPLE VERBS.	II. PREPOSITIONAL VERBS.
1. The <i>incomplete</i> simple verbs have 2 aspects	1. Formed from the <i>incomplete</i> simple verbs, the prepositional verbs have 2 aspects
1) <i>imperfect.</i> 2) <i>iterative.</i>	1) <i>imperfect.</i> 2) <i>perfect of duration.</i>
<i>дѣлать.</i> <i>дѣлывать</i>	<i>обдѣлывать.</i> <i>обдѣлать</i>
3. The <i>defective</i> simple verbs have only the <i>imperfect</i> aspect	2. Formed from the <i>defective</i> simple verbs, they have only the aspect <i>perfect of duration</i>
<i>имѣть</i>	<i>возимѣть</i>
3. The <i>complete</i> simple verbs have the 3 aspects	3. Formed from the <i>complete</i> simple verbs, they have the 3 aspects
1) <i>imperfect.</i> 2) <i>iterative.</i> 3) <i>perf. of unity</i>	1) <i>imperfect.</i> 2) <i>perf. of durat.</i> 3) <i>perf. of unity</i>
<i>кидать.</i> <i>кидывать</i> <i>кинуть</i>	<i>закидывать</i> <i>закидать</i> <i>закинуть.</i>
4. The <i>double</i> simple verbs are two verbs which have together 3 aspects	4. Formed from the <i>double</i> simple verbs, there are two various verbs, each with 2 aspects a) from the <i>definite</i> verb b) from the <i>indefinite</i> verb.
1) <i>definite imp.</i> 2) <i>indefin. imp.</i> 3) <i>iterative.</i>	1) <i>imperf.</i> 2) <i>perfect.</i> 1) <i>imperf.</i> 2) <i>perfect.</i>
<i>нести.</i> <i>носить</i> <i>нашивать.</i>	<i>выносить</i> <i>вынести</i> <i>вынашивать</i> <i>выносить.</i>

60.—The *incomplete* simple verbs are those which ^{Simple verbs.} do not designate a physical action properly so called, neither a movement of a place to another. These verbs have two aspects: 1) the *imperfect* aspect, and 2) the *iterative* aspect. The first, which is the radical form of the verb, ends in *тъ*, *чь*, *ти* or *щу*, and the latter in *ывать*, *ивать*, *вать* or

ать, and is formed from the imperfect aspect, as is seen in the following examples.

In the formation of the iterative aspect the tonic accent is placed on the termination *ать* and *ать*, whilst in *ивать* and *увать* it is placed on the antepenultima, and if in this syllable is an *о*, this vowel is changed into *а*. We must yet observe that the iterative aspect is seldom used in the infinitive, and it has in general only the preterit tense; e. g. *не пивать тебѣ вина*, *you ought not to drink wine*; *онъ въздѣлѣ верхомъ*, *he rid often*; but this inflection is necessary to form the prepositional verbs. The table of irregular verbs, above shown (§ 58), gives also the iterative aspect, which in these verbs presents some irregularities.

1) Imperfect aspect.	2) Iterative asp.
Гадать, to guess, I, с.	гадывать.
Думать, to think, —	думывать.
Дѣлать, to make, —	дѣлывать.
Играть, to play, —	игрывать.
Кутать, to wrap, —	кутывать.
Мотать, to wind, —	матывать.
Работать, to work, —	рабатывать.
Щупать, to sound, —	щупывать.
Знать, to know, —	знавать.
Ковать, to forge, I. 2.	ковывать.
Рисовать, to draw, —	рисовывать.
Советовать, to counsel, —	советывать.
Воевать, to war, —	воевывать.
Дневать, to pass the day, —	дневывать.
Ночевать, to pass the night, —	ночевывать.
Гулять, to take a walk, I. 3.	гуливать.
Равнять, to equal, —	равнивать.
Смѣяться, to laugh, —	смѣиваться.
Вѣять, to blow, —	вѣвать.
Сѣять, to sow, —	сѣвать.
Слабѣть, to grow weak, I. 4.	слабѣвать.
Грѣть, to warm, —	грѣвать.
Говѣть, to keep fast, —	гамливать.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative asp.*

Брани́ть, to scold, II, 1.	бра́нивать.
Пали́ть, to fire, —	па́ливать.
Молит́ь, to pray, —	ма́ливать.
Спо́рить, to contend, —	спа́ривать.
Дари́ть, to give, —	да́ривать.
Дрази́ть, to provoke, —	дра́жнить.
Боле́ть, to ache, —	ба́ливать.
Смотре́ть, to look, —	сма́тривать.
Горе́ть, to burn, —	гара́ть.
Веле́ть, to order, —	велѣ́вать.
Зре́ть, to see, —	зира́ть.
Поит́ь, to give to drink,	па́ивать.
Клеит́ь, to glue, —	кле́ивать.
Боя́ться, to fear, —	ба́иваться.
Поро́ть, to rip, —	па́рывать.
Моло́ть, to grind, —	ма́лывать.
Люби́ть, to love, II, 2.	лю́блывать.
Лови́ть, to catch, —	ла́вливать.
Руби́ть, to hew, —	руба́ть.
Корми́ть, to nourish, —	ка́рмливать.
То́пить, to heat, —	та́пливать.
Терпе́ть, to suffer, —	те́рпиво́вать.
Кипѣ́ть, to boil, —	кипа́ть.
Дрема́ть, to slumber, —	дре́мливать.
Сыпа́ть, to strew, —	сыпа́ть.
Хрома́ть, to be lame, —	хра́мывать.
Лечи́ть, to cure, II, 3.	ле́чивать.
Служи́ть, to serve, —	слу́живать.
Туши́ть, to put out, —	ту́шить.
Морщи́ть, to wrinkle, —	ма́рщить.
Держа́ть, to keep, —	де́рживать.
Молча́ть, to be silent, —	мал́чивать.
Дыша́ть, to breathe, —	дыха́ть.
Глади́ть, to even, II, 4.	гла́живать.
Городи́ть, to enclose, —	гора́живать.
Суди́ть, to judge, —	су́живать.
Грузи́ть, to lade, —	гру́живать.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative asp.*

Сидѣть, to sit, II. 4.	СИЖИВАТЬ.
Вязать, to tie, —	ВЯЗЫВАТЬ.
Платить, to pay, II. 5.	ПЛАЧИВАТЬ.
Колотить, to knock, —	КОЛАЧИВАТЬ.
Молотить, to thrash, —	МОЛАЧИВАТЬ.
Плакать, to weep, —	ПЛАКИВАТЬ.
Вѣсить, to weigh, II. 6.	ВѢШИВАТЬ.
Просить, to ask, —	ПРАШИВАТЬ.
Гасить, to extinguish, —	ГАШИВАТЬ.
Писать, to write, —	ПИСЫВАТЬ.
Плясать, to dance, —	ПЛЯСЫВАТЬ.
Пахать, to plough, —	ПАХИВАТЬ.
Гостить, to visit, II. 7.	ГАЩИВАТЬ.
Мостить, to floor, —	МАЩИВАТЬ.
Снастить, to rig, —	СНАЩИВАТЬ.
Искать, to seek, —	ИСКИВАТЬ.
Топнуть, to sink, III. 1.	ТОПАТЬ.
Тянуть, to draw, —	ТЯГИВАТЬ.
Вяннуть, to fade, —	ВЯДАТЬ.
Сохнуть, to dry, —	СЫХАТЬ.
Пахнуть, to smell, —	ПАХИВАТЬ.
Гнуть, to bend, —	ГИБАТЬ.
Мкнуть, to shut, —	МЫКАТЬ.
Сосать, to suck, —	САСЫВАТЬ.
Переть, to press, III. 2.	ПИРАТЬ.
Тереть, to rub, —	ТИРАТЬ.

61.—The *defective* simple verbs are those which have only the *indefinite imperfect* aspect, such are the following verbs:

Адѣть, to grow ruby. I. 4.	Желать, to wish, I. 1.
Бѣдствовать, to be in misery, I. 2.	Имѣть, to have, I. 4.
Винить, to accuse, II. 1.	Карать, to punish, I. 1.
to govern, I. 4.	Льстить, to flatter, II. 7.
to hurt, II. 4.	Мечтать, to imagine, I. 1.
to be proud, II. 4.	Мирить, to pacify, II. 1.
to have pity, I. 4.	Мудрить, to subtilize, II. 1.

Мягчить, to mollify, II. 3.	Творить, to create, II. 1.
Полдничать, to lunch, I. 1.	Терять, to lose, I. 3.
Радеть, to take care, I. 4.	Торопить, to hurry, II. 2.
Растить, to let grow, II. 7.	Умничать, to refine, I. 1.
Роптать, to murmur, II. 7.	Умѣть, to know, I. 4.
Рыдать, to sob, I. 1.	Хитрить, to be artful, II. 1.
Святить, to sanctify, II. 7.	Хранить, to preserve, II. 1.
Спѣшить, to hasten, II. 3.	Хотѣть, to will, <i>irr.</i>
Стараться, to endeavour, I. 1.	Щадить, to spare, II. 4.

The defective verbs differ from the incomplete verbs in as much as they have not the iterative aspect, which in general is used only in verbs designating an ordinary, non intellectual action, and it is not found in poetry neither in an elevated style.

62.—The *complete* simple verbs are those which designate ordinarily a physical action of men or animals, or, speaking more correctly, a visible or audible action. These verbs have the three aspects: 1) the *imperfect*, 2) the *iterative*, and 3) the *perfect of unity*. The two first aspects have all the properties of those of incomplete verbs; but the perfect aspect of unity ends in *нуть*, and is formed putting this termination in the place of that of the imperfect aspect, sometimes with a little change of the vowel, and sometimes with the elision of the preceding consonant, as is seen in the following examples.

1) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Iterative aspect.</i>	3) <i>Perf. asp. of unity.</i>
А'хать, to sigh, I. 1. . . .	а'хивать.	а'хнуть, III. 1.
Блѣтать, to shine, — . . .	—	блѣснуть, —
Болтать, to shake, — . . .	балтывать.	болтнуть, —
Глотать, to swallow, — . .	глѣтывать.	глѣнуть, —
Двигать, to move, I. 1. and		
II. 4.	двигивать and двигать.	двинуть, —
Дерзать, to dare, I. 1. . .	—	дерзнуть, —

- 1) *Imperfect aspect.* 2) *Iterative aspect.* 3) *Perf. asp. of unity.*

Зѣвѣть, to yawn, I. 1.	зѣвывать	зѣвнѣть, III, 1.
Касѣться, to touch, —	—	коснѣться, —
Квѣкать, to quack, —	квѣкивать	квѣкнѣть, —
Кивѣть, to give a nod, —	—	кивнѣть, —
Кидѣть, to cast, —	кидывать	кинуть, —
Лопѣть, to burst, —	лопывать	лопнѣть, —
Нюхѣть, to smell, —	нюхивать	нюхнѣть, —
Порхѣть, to flutter, —	пѣрхивать	порхнѣть, —
Прыгѣть, to jump, —	прыгивать	прыгнѣть, —
Прѣдѣть, to bound, —	прѣдывать	прѣнѣть, —
Сверкѣть, to flash, —	свѣркивать	сверкнѣть, —
Толкѣть, to push, —	талкивать	толкнѣть, —
Трогѣть, to touch, —	трѣгивать	трѣнѣть, —
Хѣркать, to spit, —	хѣркивать	хѣркнѣть, —
Хлопѣть, to clap, —	хлопывать	хлопнѣть, —
Совѣть, to shove, I. 2.	совывать	сунѣть, —
Клевѣть, to peck, —	клѣвывать	клевнѣть, —
Плевѣть, to spit, —	плѣвывать	плѣнѣть, —
Жевѣть, to chew, —	жѣвывать	жевнѣть, —
Кашлять, to cough, I. 3.	кашливать	кашлянѣть, —
Нырѣть, to dive, —	ныривать	нырнѣть, —
Стрѣлять, to shoot, —	стрѣливать	стрѣльнѣть, —
Швырѣть, to sling, —	швыривать	швырнѣть, —
Рѣять, to throw, —	—	ринѣть, —
Скользѣть, to slip, II. 1.	скѣльзывать	скользнѣть, —
Шевелѣть, to stir, —	шевелѣвать	шевелѣнѣть, —
Колѣть, to sting, —	калывать	кольнѣть, —
Давѣть, to press, II. 2.	давливать	давнѣть, —
Рубѣть, to hew, —	рубѣть	рубнѣть, —
Гремѣть, to thunder, —	—	грѣнѣть, —
Храпѣть, to snore, —	храпывать	храпнѣть, —
Трепѣть, to brake, —	трѣпавать	трепнѣть, —
Щипѣть, to pinch, —	щипывать	щипнѣть, —
Ворошить, to rummage, II. 3.	ворѣшивать	ворохнѣть, —
Плющѣть, to flatten, —	плющивать	плюснѣть, —
Вязѣть, to squeak, —	вязгивать	вязгнѣть, —
Дрожѣть, to tremble, —	дрѣгивать	дрогнѣть, —

1) *imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative aspect.*3) *Perf. asp. of unity.*

Крича́ть, to cry, II. 3.	крики́вать.	крикну́ть, III. 1.
Пы́жать, to burn, —	пы́живать.	пы́хнуть, —
Тре́щать, to burst, —	тре́скивать.	тре́снуть, —
Гля́деть, to look, II. 4.	гля́дивать.	гляну́ть, —
Бры́згать, to splash, —	бры́згивать.	бры́знуть, —
Лиза́ть, to lick, —	лизыва́ть.	лизну́ть, —
Ма́зать, to anoint, —	ма́зывать.	мазну́ть, —
Верти́ть, to turn, II. 5.	вёрты́вать or вёрчи́вать.	верну́ть, —
Скака́ть, to leap, —	скаки́вать.	скокну́ть, —
Клика́ть, to call, —	клика́ть.	кликну́ть, —
Шепта́ть, to whisper, —	шепты́вать.	шепну́ть, —
Труси́ть, to sprinkle, II. 6.	—	тру́хну́ть, —
Колыха́ть, to swing, —	колы́живать.	колы́хну́ть, —
Маха́ть, to wave, —	ма́живать.	махну́ть, —
Плеска́ть, to splash, II. 7.	плёски́вать.	плесну́ть, —
Прыска́ть, to syringe, —	прыски́вать.	прысну́ть, —
Свиста́ть, to whistle, —	свисты́вать.	свисну́ть, —
Хлеста́ть, to lash, —	хлёсты́вать.	хлесну́ть, —
Грести́, to scrape, <i>irr.</i>	греба́ть.	гребну́ть, —
Ду́ть, to blow, —	дува́ть.	ду́нуть, —
Жечь, to burn, —	жига́ть.	жигну́ть, —
Рва́ть, to tear, —	рыва́ть.	рвану́ть, —
Стричь, to shear, —	стрига́ть.	стригну́ть, —
Трести́, to skake, —	тряса́ть.	тряхну́ть, —

Some verbs, as *мину́ть, обману́ть, помяну́ть, вы́нуть*, which are perfect aspects of *миновать, to pass; обманывать, to cheat; поминать, to mention; вынимать, to take out*, have the termination of the perfect aspect of unity; but by their meaning they do not designate an action performed only once. In these verbs the letter *н* belongs to the root, and not to the termination.

63.—The *double* simple verbs are those which designate the movement of an acting object, or sometimes a visible or audible action. These verbs have together three aspects: 1) the *definite imperfect*, 2) the *indefinite imperfect*, and 3) the *iterative*

aspect. The definite aspect is the radical form, from which are derived both the others. These are the following verbs:

1) <i>Definite imperfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Indefinite imp. aspect.</i>	3) <i>Iterative aspect.</i>
Блудить, to ramble, II. 4.	блуждать, I. 1.	—
Брести, to wander, <i>irr.</i>	бродить, II. 4.	браживать.
Бѣжать, to run, <i>irr.</i>	бѣгать, I. 1.	бѣгивать and бѣгать.
Валить, to throw down, II. 1.	валать, I. 3.	валивать.
Везти, to carry, <i>irr.</i>	возить, II. 4.	важивгъ.
Вести, to lead, <i>irr.</i>	водить, —	важивать.
Видѣть, to see, II. 4.	видать, I. 1.	видывать.
Гнать, to drive, <i>irr.</i>	гонять, I. 3.	ганивать.
Идти, to go, <i>irr.</i>	ходить, II. 4.	хаживать.
Катить, to roll, II. 5.	качать, I. 1.	качивать.
Кривить, to crook, II. 2.	кривлять, I. 3.	крививать.
Летѣть, to fly, II. 5.	летать, I. 1.	лѣтывать.
Ломить, to break, II. 2.	ломать, —	ламывать.
Лѣзть, to climb, <i>irr.</i>	лѣзть, II. 4.	лѣзать and лаживать.
Нести, to bring, <i>irr.</i>	носить, II. 6.	нашивать.
Плыть, to swim, <i>irr.</i>	плавать, I. 1.	плывать.
Ползти, to crawl, <i>irr.</i>	ползать, —	ползать and палзывать.
Ронить, to let fall, II. 1.	ронять, I. 3.	ранивать.
Слышать, to hear, II. 3.	слыхать, I. 1.	слыхивать.
Садить, to seat, II. 4.	сажать, —	саживать.
Ташить, to trail, II. 3.	таскать, —	таскивать.
Ѣхать, to ride, <i>irr.</i>	ѣздить, II. 4.	ѣзживать and ѣзжать.

The Russian language has some verbs which, with a double termination, do not designate a movement; such are: блистать and блестятъ, to shine; мѣрить and мѣрять, to measure; свистать and свистѣть, to whistle. These verbs do not belong to the class of the double verbs; they are two various forms which have the same meaning, and which do not express the definite or indefinite nature of the action.

Prepositional verbs.

64.—The prepositional verbs are formed from the simple verbs by means of any preposition. The prepositions, when they are joined to a verb, sub-

ject it to sundry changes either in the voice, in the aspect and time, or in the meaning.

1. A neuter verb sometimes takes with the preposition the active meaning, as: *спать*, to sleep, and *проспать*, to pass in sleeping; *быть*, to be, and *забыть*, to forget; *плакать*, to weep, and *выплакать*, to obtain by weeping.

2. The influence of a preposition on the time and aspect is more important than that on the voice. A simple verb, taking a preposition, receives a more restricted meaning. Thus, by joining to a preposition, the iterative aspect becomes imperfect, and the imperfect aspect becomes perfect. But this latter remains a perfect aspect even with a preposition, as is seen by the two following examples.

Simple figure.	Prepositional figure.
<div> <div>Двигнуть, to move,</div> <div>Бросить, to throw,</div> </div> <div> <div>perf. asp. of unity.</div> </div> <div> <div>двигать,</div> <div>бросать,</div> </div> <div> <div>imperfect aspect</div> </div> <div> <div>двигать or двигивать,</div> <div>брасывать,</div> </div> <div> <div>iterative asp.</div> </div>	<div> <div>Вдвигнуть, to move in,</div> <div>Набросить, to throw on,</div> </div> <div> <div>perf. asp. of unity.</div> </div> <div> <div>вдвигать,</div> <div>набросать,</div> </div> <div> <div>perf. asp. of duration.</div> </div> <div> <div>вдвигать or двигивать,</div> <div>набрасывать,</div> </div> <div> <div>imperfect asp</div> </div>

3. The acceptance of the verb, independently of the completion of the action, is modified by the meaning of the preposition, as is seen in the two following examples: *ходить* or *идти*, to go, and *имать* or *ять*, to take.

Входить, *войти*, to go in.
Восходить, *взойти*, to go up.
Выходить, *выйти*, to go out.
Доходить, *дойти*, to come to.
Заходить, *зайти*, to go behind.
Исходить, *изойти*, to go out.
Находить, *найти*, to go upon.

Нисходить, *низойти*, to go down.
Обходить, *обойти*, to go round.
Отходить, *отойти*, to go away.
Переходить, *перейти*, to go over.
Превосходить, *превзойти*, to surpass.

Походить , to resemble.	Донимать , донять , to get the remainder.
Пойти , to go.	Занимать , занять , to borrow.
Подходить , подойти , to go under.	Изнимать , изнять , to take out.
Предходить , to go before.	Нанимать , нанять , to hire.
Приходить , прійти , to come in.	Обнимать , обнять , to embrace.
Проходить , пройти , to go through.	Отнимать , отнять , to take away.
Происходить , произойти , to proceed.	Перенимать , перенять , to intercept. [stand.
Расходиться , разойтись , to go asunder.	Понимать , понять , to understand.
Сходить , сойти , to go down.	Поймать , to catch.
Снисходить , снизойти , to condescend.	Поднимать , поднять , to take up.
Уходить , уйти , to go away.	Предпринимать , предпринять , to undertake.
Внимать , внять , to attend to.	Принимать , принять , to accept.
Взимать , to levy.	Приподнимать , приподнять , to raise up.
Взять , to take.	Пронимать , пронять , to put through.
Воздымать , to raise.	Разнимать , разнять , to take asunder.
Воспринимать , воспринять , to receive.	Снимать , снять , to take off.
Вынимать , вынуть , to take out.	Унимать , унять , to repress.

The two preceding examples show that the prepositions which are joined to verbs, are: **в** (**во**), **вз** (**взо**, **воз**), **вы**, **до**, **за**, **из** (**изо**), **на**, **над** (**надо**), **низ** (**низо**), **о** or **об** (**обо**), **от** (**ото**), **пере** or **пре**, **по**, **под** (**подо**), **при**, **про**, **раз** (**разо**), **с** (**со**), **у**. We must remark that the prepositions which end in a vowel, never undergo a change, whilst those which end in a consonant, take the vowel *o*, when they have to be united to a verb which begins with two or three consonants, as well as to the verb *идти* (*sl. ити*), in which the vowel *и* besides that changes into the semi-vowel (*й*).

The prepositions **без** (**безо**), **пред** (**предо**), and also **с** (**со**) in the meaning of a reciprocal action, modifying the acceptance of a verb, do not communicate to it the meaning of the completion of an action. Joined to one of these prepositions, the verb remains in its imperfect aspect, as: **безчестить**, to dishonour; **предвидеть**, to foresee; **содѣйствовать**, to cooperate.

It is the same with adverbs used sometimes for prepositions, e. g. *ПРОТИВОСТОЯТЬ*, to resist; *МИМОИДТИ*, to come by.

Care must be taken not to confound the prepositional verbs with the verbs which are derived from nouns formed with a preposition, as: *РАЗУМѢТЬ*, to understand, from *РАЗУМЪ*, intelligence; *ПОМНИТЬ*, to remember, from *ПАМЯТЬ*, memory; *СОВѢСТИТЬСЯ*, to have a conscience, from *СОВѢСТЬ*, conscience. These verbs belong to the class of the incomplete simple verbs.

65.—The prepositional verbs, with regard to their delineation, differ among them, according as they are formed from the defective, incomplete, complete or double simple verbs.

1. Those which are derived from a *defective* simple verb, have only the *perfect* aspect, which is purely the imperfect aspect of the simple verb, joined to one of the prepositions above enumerated. Such are:

<i>Пожелать</i> , to wish, I. 1.	<i>Растерять</i> , to lose, I. 3.
<i>Покара́ть</i> , to chastise, —	<i>Возьмѣть</i> , to have, I. 4.
<i>Отмечать</i> , to imagine, —	<i>Завладѣть</i> , to possess, —
<i>Воспы́лать</i> , to burst into flames, —	<i>Сумѣть</i> , to know, —
<i>Нарыда́ться</i> , to wail, —	<i>Оцени́ться</i> , to whelp, II. 1.
<i>Постара́ться</i> , to endeavour, —	<i>Остепени́ться</i> , to grow seditious, —
<i>Ошельмовать</i> , to treat like a rogue, I. 2.	<i>Возгори́ться</i> , to be proud of, II. 4.
<i>Возопи́ать</i> (for <i>взвони́ать</i>), to cry out, I. 3.	<i>Пощади́ть</i> , to spare, —
	<i>Затрепета́ть</i> , to tremble, II. 7.
	<i>Поблѣкнутъ</i> , to fade, III. 1.

Some verbs derived from the defective simple verbs, have also the *imperfect* aspect, which is formed from the iterative aspect, not used in the simple verb and taken in its contracted form, as will be seen later (2. b).

The preceding and the following examples show that the *perfect* aspect of a prepositional verb is formed from the im-

perfect aspect of the simple verb, by the mere joining of a preposition, without any change in the termination of the verb. Further, the infinitive and the imperative from imperfect become *perfect* (стараться, *to endeavour*; старайся, *endeavour*, and постараться, *to use all one's endeavours*; постарайся, *use all your endeavours*); the present (старюсь, *I endeavour*) becomes a *perfect future* (постарюсь, *I shall endeavour, I shall use all my endeavours*), and the imperfect preterit (старался, *I endeavoured*) becomes a *perfect preterit* (постарался, *I have used all my endeavours*).

As the prepositions serve generally to form the perfect preterit and future of the defective simple verbs, custom only can show what is the preposition which a verb takes in order to designate the completion of an action. Thus *за* expresses a beginning; *но*, a part; *до*, the finishing; *от*, the discontinuance; *про*, all the time; *с*, *у*, *за*, *но*, the completion and simultaneousness; *вы*, *из*, *об*, *при*, *пере*, a totality. E. g. заговорить, *to begin to speak*; поговорить, *to speak a little*; договорить, *to finish speaking*; отговорить, *to leave off speaking*; проговорить, *to pass the time in speaking*; сделать, *to have made*; украсть, *to have stolen*; засмяться, *to have laughed*; покраснеть, *to have blushed*; выходить, исходить, обходить, *to have gone all over*; приесть, *to have eaten all up*; переделать, *to have made all*.

2. Derived from the *incomplete* simple verbs, the prepositional verbs have two aspects: 1) the *perfect* aspect, and 2) the *imperfect* aspect, which are formed, the former from the imperfect, and the latter from the iterative aspect of the simple verb, at first without any change in the terminations, at other times with contraction, sometimes even with and without contraction at the same time: occasionally they vary widely from the general rules for the formation of the prepositional verbs. We sometimes find: a quite irregular formation, the want of one of the two aspects perfect or imperfect, the loss or non-existence of the simple verb which has

formed the prepositional verb, and several other irregularities which are mentioned below.

We must remark that in the prepositional verbs the tonic accent remains upon the same syllable as in the simple verb, with exception of the verbs formed with the preposition *съ*, which in the perfect aspect transfer the accent of this preposition. Some monosyllabic verbs, taking a preposition, transfer also, in the preterit of the perfect aspect, the accent to the preposition; as: *умеръ, отперъ, прибылъ, началъ*, &c., from *умерѣть, to die; отперѣть, to open; прибыть, to arrive; начать, to begin*.

a) The perfect and imperfect aspects of the prepositional verb preserve both the terminations of the imperfect and iterative aspects of the simple verb. Such are:

1) Perfect aspect.	2) Imperfect asp.
Угадѣть, to guess, I. 1.	угадывать, I. 1.
Обдумать, to deliberate, —	обдумывать, —
Отдѣлать, to finish, —	отдѣлывать, —
Заиграть, to play, —	зайгрывать, —
Окутать, to wrap about, —	окутывать, —
Промотать, to squander, —	проматывать, —
Смѣшать, to mingle, —	смѣшивать, —
Узнать, to recognise, —	узнавать, —
Приковать, to chain to, I. 2.	приковывать, —
Обрисовать, to outline, —	обрисовывать, —
Основать, to found, —	основывать, —
Завоевать, to conquer, —	завоевывать, —
Прогулять, to walk, I. 3.	прогуливать, —
Осмѣять, to laugh at, —	осмѣивать, —
Усѣять, to sow, —	усѣвать, —
Ослабѣть, to grow weak, I. 4.	ослабѣвать, —
Договеть, to fast, —	догавливать, —
Согрѣть, to warm, —	согрѣвать, —
Зажарить, to roast, II. 1.	зажаривать, —
Усмотрѣть, to discern, —	усматривать, —

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

ь, to damage, II. 4.	повреждать, I. 1.
Побудить, to incite, —	побуждать, —
Приблизить, to draw near, —	приближать, —
Замѣтить, to remark, II. 5.	замѣчать, —
Погасить, to put out, II. 6.	погашать, —
Обольстить, to seduce, II. 7.	обольщать, —
Отомстить, to avenge, —	отмщать, —
Посвятить, to hallow, —	посвящать, —

c) Sometimes in the same verb the imperfect aspect is formed in two ways, with contraction and without contraction. Here we must remark that, if the prepositional verb retains its primitive, simple, physical meaning, the termination of its imperfect aspect is without contraction, and that on the contrary it is contracted, if the prepositional verb takes an abstract, figurative, intellectual acceptation, as is seen in the following examples:

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Разбранить, to scold, II. 1. разбранивать, I. 1. & Возбранить, to forbid, I. 1. . возбранять, I. 3.	
Запалить, to kindle, — . запаливать, —, & Воспалить, to inflame, — . воспалиать, —	
Переполнить, to fill, — . перепаливать, —, & Исполнить, to fulfil, — . исполнять, —	
Перестроить, to rebuild, — . перестраивать, —, & Устроить, to arrange, — . устроить, —	
Завострить, to sharpen, — . завастривать, —, & Поострить, to excite, — . поощрять, —	
Изловить, to catch, II. 2. излавливать, —, & Уловить, to surprise, II. 2. уловлять, —	
Подмочить, to wet, II. 3. подмачивать, —, & Омочить, to steep, II. 3. . омочать, I. 1.	
Выучить, to teach, — . выучивать, —, & Научить, to initiate, — . научать, —	
Загородить, to fence, II. 4. загораживать, —, & Оградить, to guard, II. 4. . ограждать, —	
Пересудить, to rejudge, — . пересуживать, —, & Осудить, to condemn, — . осуждать, —	
Осадить, to plant, — . осаживать, —, & Осадить, to besiege, — . осажать, —	
Выпередить, to outgo, — . выперевивать, —, & Предупредить, to prevent, — предупредять, —	
Вытвердить, to rehearse, — . вытверживать, —, & Утвердить, to affirm, — . утверждать, —	
Помутить, to muddy, II. 5. помучивать, —, & Возмутить, to raise, II. 7. . возмущать, —	
Засвѣтить, to light, — . засвѣчивать, —, & Просвѣтить, to enlighten, — . просвѣщать, —	
Закрасить, to colour, II. 6. закрашивать, —, & Украсить, to adorn, II. 6. . украшать, —	
Загоститься, to visit, II. 7. загашиваться, —, & Угостить, to regale, II. 7. . угощать, —	

d) The inchoative verbs in *нѣтъ*, which by their nature have not the iterative aspect, take, in the

formation of the imperfect aspect of prepositional verbs, the termination *amb*, e.g.

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Замёрзнуть, to freeze, III. 1.	замерзѣть, I. 1.
Потухнуть, to go out, —	потухѣть, —
Погибнуть, to perish, —	погибѣть, —
Окиснуть, to grow sour, —	окисѣть, —
Утихнуть, to abate, —	утихѣть, —
Погаснуть, to go out, —	погасѣть, —
Озябнуть, to starve, —	озябѣть, —
Замокнуть, to grow wet, —	замокѣть, —
Изсохнуть, to dry up, —	изсыхѣть, —
Издохнуть, to die, —	издыхѣть, —
Привыкнуть, to habituate, —	привыкѣть, —
Исчезнуть, to vanish, —	исчезѣть, —

c) The Russian language has some prepositional verbs, the simple verb of which is no more used or is lost. Such are:

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Оправдѣть, to justify, I. 1.	оправдывѣть, I. 1.
Обнародовать, to publish, I. 2.	обнародывѣть, —
Затѣять, to devise, I. 3.	затѣвѣть, —
Одолѣть, to surmount, I. 4.	одолѣвѣть, —
Укоренить, to root, II. 1.	укореняѣть, I. 3.
Водворить, to settle, —	водворяѣть, —
Разорить, to ruin, —	разоряѣть, —
Ударить, to strike, —	ударяѣть, —
Повторить, to repeat, —	повторяѣть, —
Истребить, to destroy, II. 2.	истребляѣть, —
Одушевить, to animate, —	одушевляѣть, —
Усыновить, to adopt, —	усыновляѣть, —
Надоумить, to instruct, —	надоумлявѣть, I. 1.
Приложить, to add, II. 3.	прилагѣть, —
Уничижить, to humble, —	уничижѣть, —

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Уничто́жить, to annul, II. 3.	уничтожа́ть, I. 1.
Воору́жить, to arm, —	воору́жать, —
Вну́шить, to suggest, —	внуша́ть, —
Вручи́ть, to hand, —	вруча́ть, —
Исто́щить, to exhaust, —	исто́щать, —
Соору́дить, to erect, II. 4.	соору́жать, —
Побѣди́ть, to vanquish, —	побѣжда́ть, —
Услади́ть, to delight, —	услажда́ть, —
Пронзи́ть, to pierce, —	пронза́ть, —
Обидѣ́ть, to offend, —	оби́жать, —
Встрѣ́тить, to meet, II. 5.	встрѣ́чать, —
Отвѣ́тить, to answer, —	отвѣ́чать, —
Воскреси́ть, to revive, II. 6.	воскреша́ть, —
Помѣсти́ть, to place, II. 7.	помѣща́ть, —
Подусти́ть, to instigate, —	поду́щать, —
Посѣти́ть, to visit, —	посѣща́ть, —
Украти́ть, to appease, —	у́кромать, —
Насы́тить, to satiate, —	насы́щать, —
Защи́тить, to protect, —	защи́щать, —
Дости́гнуть, to reach, III. 1.	дости́гать, —
Воскрѣ́снуть, to resuscitate, —	воскреса́ть, —
Окуну́ть, to dip, —	оку́нывать, —
Замкнѹ́ть, to lock, —	замы́кать, —
Ушиби́ть, to bruise, —	ушиба́ть, —
Простѣ́рть, to extend, III. 2.	прости́рать, —
Обу́ть, to put shoes, <i>irr.</i>	обува́ть, —
Попра́ть, to trample, —	попи́рать, —
Распи́ть, to crucify, —	распина́ть, —
Нача́ть, to begin, —	начина́ть, —
Отня́ть, to take out, —	отнима́ть, —
Отверзѣ́ти, to open, —	отверза́ть, —
Обрѣ́сти, to find out, —	обрѣ́тать, —
Сче́сть, to count, —	счита́ть, —
Разсвѣ́сти, to grow light, —	разсвѣ́тать, —
Запря́чь, to put to, —	запряга́ть, —

Among these verbs there are several which are also used with other prepositions besides those which are above indicated.

f) The following verbs do not form their perfect aspect from the imperfect aspect of the used simple verb, but from some disused aspect of this simple verb.

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*

Замѣнить, II. 1 (instead of *замѣнять*). замѣнять, to compensate, I. 3.
 Застрѣлить, — (instead of *застрѣлѣть*). застрѣливать, to shoot, kill, I. 1.
 Вскочить, II. 3 (instead of *вскакать*) . . . вскакивать, to leap in, —
 Укусить, II. 6 (instead of *укусать*) . . . укусывать, to bite, —
 Возвѣстить, II. 7 (instead of *возвѣщать*). возвѣщать, to announce, —
 Поглотить, — (instead of *поглотать*) . поглощать, to swallow up, —

g) Some prepositional verbs are formed irregularly, and occasionally they have two formations, one regular, and the other irregular. Such are:

REGULAR FORMATION

IRREGULAR FORMATION.

1) *Perfect aspect*2) *Imperfect aspect.*1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*

Презрѣть, to despise, II. 1. . . презирать, I. 1	& Обозрѣть, to examine, II. 1. обозрывать, I. 1.
Сыскать, to find, II. 7. сыскивать, —	& Снискать, to obtain, II. 7. снискивать, —
Обуздать, to curb, I. 1. обуздывать, —	& Взуздать, to bridle, I. 1. взуздывать, —
Создать, to build, <i>irr.</i> (созидѣ) созидать, —	& Создать (создаѣмъ), создавать (создаѣ).
Нагрести, to rake up, <i>irr.</i> нагребать, —	& Погребсти, to bury, <i>irr.</i> погребать, I. 1.
Позволить, to permit, II. 1. позволять, I. 3	& Уволить, to discharge, II. 1. увольнять, I. 3.
Осмѣять, to deride, I. 3. осмѣивать, I. 1	& Насмѣяться, to laugh at, I. 3. насмѣхаться, I. 1
Обязать, to bind, II. 4. обязывать, —	& Обязать, to oblige, II. 4. обязывать, —
Сравнить, to even, I. 3. сравнивать, —	& Сравнить, to compare, II. 1. сравнивать, —
Принять, to take, <i>irr.</i> (примѣ) принимать, —	& Вынуть, to take out, III. 1. вынимать, —
Прибѣжать, to run up, <i>irr.</i> прибѣгать, —	& Прибѣгнуть, to resort, III. 1. прибѣгать, —

h) Other prepositional verbs have no perfect aspect and therefore fall into the class of defective simple verbs; such are the following:

Обожать, to adore, I. 1.	Ожидать, to wait, I. 1.
Обладать, to dominate, —	Обитать, to habit, —
Объщать, to promise, —	Опасаться, to fear, —
Завѣщать, to bequeath, —	Обуревать, to agitate, —
Увѣщавать, to exhort, —	Подражать, to imitate, —
Охудать, to criticize, —	Подобать, to be necessary, —
Осязать, to touch, —	Порицать, to blame, —

Подозрѣвать, to suspect, I. 1.	Ущербляться, to decrease, I. 3.
Сомнѣваться, to doubt, —	Сожалѣть, to take pity, I. 4.
Созерцать, to contemplate, —	Смыслить, to understand, II. 1.
Изобилловать, to abound, I. 2.	Состоять, to consist, —
Наслѣдовать, to inherit, —	Упрямиться, to be obstinate, II. 2.
Повиноваться, to obey, —	Содержать, to maintain, II. 3.
Привѣтствовать, to welcome, —	Предвидѣть, to foresee, II. 4.
Обонять, to scent, I. 3.	Походить, to resemble, —
Упражнять, to occupy, —	Зависѣть, to depend, II. 6.

2) Lastly the following simple verbs have the properties of prepositional verbs, in other words they express the accomplishment of an action without being joined to a preposition and without having the termination of unity in *нѣтъ*. They are called *perfect simple* verbs. Some of them have also the *iterative* aspect.

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>	3) <i>Iterative asp.</i>
Благословить, to bless, II. 2.	благословлять, I. 3.	—
Бросать, to throw, II. 6.	бросать, I. 1.	брасывать.
Быть, to be, <i>irr.</i>	бывать, —	быывать.
Велѣть, to order, II. 1.	(велѣть)	велѣвать.
Воротить, to turn, II. 5.	ворочать, I. 1.	ворачивать.
Дать, to give, <i>irr.</i>	давать, — (даю)	—
Дѣть, to put, <i>irr.</i>	дѣвать, —	—
Женить, to marry, II. 1.	(женить)	—
Казнить, to execute, II. 1.	(казнить)	—
Кончить, to end, II. 3.	кончать, —	канчивать.
Купить, to buy, II. 2.	(покупать).	—
Лечь, to lie, <i>irr.</i>	ложиться, II. 3.	—
Лишить, to deprive, II. 3.	лишать, I. 1.	—
Пасть, to fall, <i>irr.</i>	падать, —	(падать).
Плѣнить, to captivate, II. 1.	плѣнять, I. 3.	—
Простить, to pardon, II. 7.	прощать, I. 1.	—
Пустить, to let go, —	пускать and пушать, —	—
Ранить, to hurt, II. 1.	(ранить)	—
Родить, to beget, II. 4.	рожать and раждать, —	—

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*3) *Iterative asp.*

Рѹшить, to break down, II. 3. (рѹшить)	рѹшивать.
Рѣшить, to decide, II. 3.	рѣшать, — —
Свободить, to deliver, II. 4.	свободѣть, — —
Стать, { to become, <i>irr.</i> становиться, II. 2. становлѣваться.	
{ to be sufficient, <i>irr.</i> ставѣть, I. 1. (стаю)	—
Ступить, to go, II. 2.	ступѣть, — —
Сѣсть, to sit, <i>irr.</i>	садѣться, II. 4. —
Хватить, to seize, II. 5.	хватѣть, I. 1. хвачѣвать.
Явить, to show, II. 2.	явлѣть, I. 3. —
Ять, to take, <i>irr.</i>	имѣть, I. 1. and II. 2 (имѣю & ѣмлю). —

To the list of perfect simple verbs we must add some verbs taken from foreign languages and ending in *овать*, e. g. *атаковать*, to attack; *конфисковать*, to confiscate, which express both the perfect and imperfect aspects with the same termination and without preposition.

The verbs *велѣть*, *женѣть*, *казнѣть*, *ранѣть* and *рѹшить*, do not change their termination to form the perfect and imperfect aspects; the perfect future (*велю*, *женю*, *казню*, *раню* and *рѹшу*) is also used for the present. In the verb *купѣть*, the present and the imperfect preterit are borrowed from the prepositional verb *покупѣть*. The verbs *даровѣть*, to give; *миновѣть*, to pass, and *образовѣть*, to form, as well as the inflections *даровѣль*, *миновѣль* and *образовѣль*, are of the perfect aspect; but the inflections *дарую*, *миную* and *образую* are of the present. The verb *миновѣть* forms its future with *минѹ*, *минѣшь*, and the preterit has the two inflections *минѹль* and *миновѣль*.

With regard to the perfect simple verbs we remark that in such of them as express a physical action, performed by a single motion (as *бросѣть*, *дать*, *дѣть*, *пасть*, *пустѣть*, *ступѣть*, *хватѣть*, *ять*) the meaning of their perfect aspect is the same as that of the aspect of unity in complete verbs (§ 62).

These perfect simple verbs, with the exception of *благословѣть*, *женѣть*, *казнѣть*, *лишѣть*, *ранѣть* and *плѣнѣть*, form also prepositional verbs. Such are:

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>
Забѣть, to forget, <i>irr.</i>	забыва́ть, I. 1.
Повелѣть, to order, II. 1.	повелѣва́ть, —
Разда́ть, to distribute, <i>irr.</i> ,	раздава́ть, —
Оде́ть, to dress, <i>irr.</i>	оде́вать, —
Раскупи́ть, to buy up, II. 2.	раскупа́ть, —
Зале́чь, to hide one's self, <i>irr.</i>	залега́ть, —
Упа́сть, to fall, <i>irr.</i>	упада́ть, —
Распростѣ́ться, to take leave, II. 7. . . .	распроща́ться, —
Пропустѣ́ть, to let pass, —	пропуска́ть, —
Уродѣ́ть, to produce, II. 4.	урожа́ть, —
Разру́шить, to destroy, II. 6.	разруша́ть, —
Разрѣши́ть, to decide, —	разрѣша́ть, —
Освободи́ть, to free, II. 4.	освобожда́ть, —
Доста́ть, to procure, <i>irr.</i>	достава́ть, —
Останови́ть, to stop, II. 2.	останавлива́ть, —
Высту́пить, to go out, II. 2.	выступа́ть, —
Заса́сть, to sit, <i>irr.</i>	заса́дять, —
Изъяви́ть, to indicate, II. 2.	изъявля́ть, I. 3.

The verbs *бро́сить*, *вороти́ть*, *кони́ть* and *хвати́ть* have the two perfect aspects in their prepositional verbs, like those derived from the complete simple verbs, as we shall subsequently see. For the prepositional verbs derived from *ять*, see § 65. 3.

3. Such prepositional verbs as are derived from the *complete* simple verbs, have in addition to the preceding *perfect* and *imperfect* aspects, a second perfect aspect, which, being formed from the aspect of unity of the simple verb, indicates that the action has been or will be performed at *one time* and by a single movement, whereas the perfect aspect, which is formed from the imperfect aspect of the simple verb, indicates that the action has been or will be accomplished by various motions, and that occupied or will occupy a certain length of time.

The same remark applies to such prepositional verbs as are formed from certain double verbs, and also from the perfect simple verbs бросить, воротить, кончить and хватить; e. g.

1) Perfect aspect.		2) Imperfect aspect.	
a) of duration.	b) of unity.		
Выболтать, I. 1.	выболтнуть, III. 1.	выбалтывать, to divulge, I. 1.	
Накидать, —	накинуть, —	накидывать, to heap up, —	
Вспорхать, —	вспорхнуть, —	вспархивать, to flutter, —	
Выпрыгать, —	выпрыгнуть, —	выпрыгивать, to skip out, —	
Столкать, —	столкнуть, —	сталкивать, to push down, —	
Захлопать, —	захлопнуть, —	захлопывать, to shut with a clap, —	
Забрызгать, —	забрызнуть, —	забрызгивать, to besprinkle, —	
Всовать, I. 2.	всунуть, —	всовывать, to shove in, —	
Выклевать, —	выклюнуть, —	выклеывать, to peck out, —	
Придавить, II. 2.	придавить, —	придавливать, to press to, —	
Окликать, II. 5.	окликнуть, —	окликать, to call to, —	
Сдуть, <i>irr.</i>	сдунуть, —	сдувать, to blow off, —	
Поджечь, —	поджигнуть, —	поджигать, to fire, —	
Вывалить, I. 3.	вывалить, II. 1.	вываливать, to throw out, —	
Прокатать, I. 1.	прокатить, II. 5.	прокатывать, to roll through, —	
Выломать, —	выломить, II. 2.	выламывать, to break out, —	
Сронять, I. 3.	сронить, II. 1.	сранивать, to throw down, —	
Вытаскать, I. 1.	вытащить, II. 3.	вытаскивать, to pull out, —	
Забросать, —	забросить, II. 6.	забрасывать, to throw beyond, —	
Сворочать, —	своротить, II. 5.	сворачивать, to avert, —	
Окончать, —	окончить, II. 3.	оканчивать, to terminate, —	
Захватать, —	захватить, II. 5.	захватывать, to catch, —	

The simple verbs говорить, ловить, бить, брать and класть, to indicate an action performed by one movement, borrow their perfect aspect from another verb; as:

1) Imperfect aspect.		2) Perfect aspect.	
		a) of duration.	b) of unity.
Говорить, to speak, say, II. 1.		поговорить, to talk, II. 4.	сказать, II. 4.
Ловить, to seize, catch, II. 2.		изловить, to catch, II. 2.	поймать, I. 1.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Perfect aspect.*

	a) of duration.	b) of unity.
Бить, to beat, <i>irr.</i>	побить . . .	ударить, II. 1.
Брать, to take, <i>irr.</i>	побрать, . . .	взять, <i>irr.</i> (возьму).
Класть, to lay, <i>irr.</i>	покласть . . .	положить, II. 3.

4. From the *double* simple verbs two prepositional verbs are formed, which with their two aspects, the *perfect* and the *imperfect*, have each a particular signification. Such are:

1) From the *definite* verb.2) From the *indefinite* verb.

a) <i>Perfect asp.</i>	b) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>	a) <i>Perfect asp.</i>	b) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Выбрести, <i>irr.</i> выбродить, to go out, II. 4.		& Выбродить, II. 4.	выбродивать, to ferment, I. 1.
Выбыжать, — выбыгать, to flee, I. 1. .		& Выбыгать, I. 1.	выбыгивать, to precede, —
Завезти, — завозить, to bring back, II. 4.		& Завозить, II. 4.	заваживать, to transport, —
Провести, — . проводить, to conduct, —		& Проводить, —.	провождать, to accompany, —
Загнать, —	загонять, to drive, I. 3.	& Загонять, I. 3.	загнивать, to harass, —
Выйти, —	выходить, to go out, II. 4.	& Выходить, II. 4.	выхаживать, to obtain, —
Влететь, II. 5.	влетать, to fly in, I. 1.	& Перелетать, I. 1.	перелётывать, to fly by, —
Донести, <i>irr.</i>	доносить, to denounce, II. 6.	& Доносить, II. 6.	донашивать, to wear out, —
Вползти, —	вползать, to creep in, I. 1.	& Отползать, I. 1.	отпалывать, to go away, —
Вызхать, —	вызжать, to go out, I. 1.	& Выздить, II. 4.	вызживать, to train, —

From the other double verbs are formed prepositional verbs as from the incomplete or complete verbs. The verbs *валить*, *катить*, *ломить*, *ронить* and *тащить* form prepositional verbs with the two perfect aspects of duration and of unity, as we have seen above.

EXERCISES ON THE VERBS.

Regular verbs. I do good, as much as I wish. Thou desirest in-
 — Я делаю добро, сколько я желаю. Ты желаешь '
Present.

struct thyself. He imagines that he knows all the sciences,
 учиться. Он думать что онъ знать весь наука,

and he boasts of his success. We dare not believe in
 и хвастать (*instr.*) свой успехъ. Я дерзает не верить (*dat.*)

your words, even when you speak the truth. My neighbours
вашъ слѣво, хотѣ ты говорѣть правда. Мой сосѣдъ

only live on bread, and trust in Providence.
одинъ питаться (*instr.*) хлѣбъ, и уповѣть на (*acc.*) Провидѣніе.

You trade in cloth, and you ask much.
Ты торговѣть (*instr.*) сукно, и ты требовать (*gen.*) многое.

The pigeon cooes; the turtle moans; dogs bark; puppies
Голубъ ворковать; горлица стонѣть; собака лаять; щенокъ

yelp; the frog croaks; the raven croaks; the crow caws;
бредѣть; лягушка квакать; воронъ гракать; ворона каркать;

lions roar; the stag bells; fowls cluck; the cat
левъ рыкать; олѣнь токовать; курица кудѣхтать; кошка
mews; oxen bellow; the bee hums; the serpent hisses;
мяукать; быкъ мычать; пчела жужжать; змѣя шипѣть;

eagles scream; nightingales twitter; sheep and lambs
орѣлъ трубѣть; соловей щебетѣть; овца и ягненокъ

bleat; pigs grunt; the fox yelps; the ass brays; the
блеѣть; свинья хрюкать; лисица визжать; осѣлъ реветъ;

turkey gobbles; the quail calls; the cock crows;
калѣунъ клохтать; перепѣлка вавѣкать; пѣтухъ кукурекать;

the magpie chatters; the parrot prates. The thunder roars;
сорѣка скрекотѣть; попугай болтать. Громъ гремѣть;

water boils; the doors creak; the brooks murmur; the fire
вода кипѣть; дверь скрипѣть; ручей жужжать; огонь

crackles; the stars twinkle; the sun shines; honey-bees
трепѣть; звѣзда сверкать; солнце свѣтитъ; пчела

swarm; diamonds sparkle; dry leaves rattle; the wind
ронѣться; алмазъ блестятъ; сухой листь хрустѣть; вѣтеръ

whistles; the snow melts. The sun illumines the earth with
свистѣть; снѣгъ тѣять. Солнце озарѣть земля (*instr.*)

its rays, warms and vivifies her. The earth turns
свой лучъ, грѣть и живить онъ. Земля обращаться
round the sun. You grieve in vain.
вокругъ (*gen.*) солнце. Ты горевать напрасно.

Preterit. I walked yesterday on the bank of the river, when
Я гулять вчера по (*dat.*) берегъ рѣка, когда
the sun was setting. My sister sat under a tree,
солнце садиться. Мой сестра сидѣть подѣ (*instr.*) дѣрево,
which was shaken by the wind. Yesterday, we worked,
который качаться (*instr.*) вѣтеръ. Вчера я работать,
read, wrote and drew much. The sheep perished
читать, писать и рисовать много. Овца мереть
through the cold. His mother has been dead a long time.
отъ (*gen.*) стужа. Онъ мать умереть давно.
The enemies have shut him up in the fortress. This
Непріятель запереть онъ въ (*prep.*) крѣпость. Этотъ
man has become blind, and his wife has become deaf. My
человѣкъ ослѣпнуть, и онъ жена оглохнуть. Мой
trees have withered, and my flowers have faded.
дѣрево, высохнуть, и мой цвѣтъ завянуть.

Future. Moscow will shine long at the head of the cities
Москва красоваться долго во (*prep.*) главѣ городъ
of Russia. Thou wilt play, and I shall write. The empire
русскій. Ты играть, и я писать. Государство
of Russia will develop itself incessantly, and acquire constantly
Россійскій возвышаться безпрерывно, и приобрѣтать всегда
more force and glory. A great monarch will never
болѣе (*gen.*) сила и слава. Великій государь не никогда
die.
умереть.

Imperative. Do what thou art bidden, and do not think of resisting.
Дѣлать что ты говорить, и не думать упрямиться.

Do not lose hope, and trust in God. Go home,
 Не терять надежда, и уповать на (acc.) Богъ. Ступать домой,
 and do not dispute so much. Do not lose thy time, and
 и не толковать столько. Не тратить (gen.) время, и
 do not torment the animals. Speak always the truth, and
 не мучить (gen.) животное. Говорить всегда правда, и
 do not dispute about trifles.
 не спорить о (prep.) пустякъ.

The nightingale sings; the horse neighs; the wolf howls. Irregular verbs.
 Соловей петь; лошадь ржать; волкъ выть.

There are animals which sleep during the whole winter.
 Быть зверь, который спать (acc.) весь зима.

Thou takest much upon thyself, and I do not under-
 Ты брать много на (acc.) себя, и я не браться
 take this affair. How do you crumple this book? Не
 за (acc.) этотъ дѣло. Зачѣмъ ты мять этотъ книга. Онъ
 lives at Moscow, and is thought to be a rich man.
 жить въ (prep.) Москвѣ, и слыть (instr.) богатый человекъ.

The shepherd shears the sheep; the peasants spin the flax
 Пастухъ стричь овца; крестьянинъ прясть лёнъ
 and weave the linen. He wishes to sleep, and you wish
 и ткать холстъ. Онъ хотѣть спать, и ты хотѣть
 to play. My neighbour kept me as his own son, and could
 играть. Мой сосѣдъ беречь я какъ родной сынъ, и мочь
 not part with me. The enemies have burnt several
 не разстаться со (instr.) я. Непріятель сжечь много
 towns; they were inflamed by hatred and vengeance. The
 городъ; онъ увлечься (instr.) злоба и мщеніе.

shepherd pastured the sheep in the meadow. I will send
 Пастухъ пасти овца на (prep.) лугъ. Я послать
 for the doctor, and thou wilt send me money. This
 за (instr.) лѣкарь, и ты прислать я (gen.) деньги. Этотъ

town is flourishing, and it will flourish long through its
 городъ цвѣсти, и онъ цвѣсти долго (*instr.*)

strength and wealth. I will give thee a book, and thou, what
 сила и богатство. Я дать ты книга, и ты что

wilt thou give me? Thou canst not say: what will he give
 дать я? Ты мочь не говорить: что онъ дать

me for that? Do not take upon thyself,
 я за (*acc.*) этотъ? Не брать на (*acc.*) себя (*gen.*) тотъ (*gen.*)

what thou canst not perform. Children, live in peace, do not
 что ты мочь не исполнить. Дитя, жить мирно, не

swear, never lie, and behave yourselves well.

клясться, не никогда лгать, и вести себя хорошенько.

Definite and
 indefinite
 imperfect
 aspect.

Beasts walk and run, birds and flies fly, fishes
 Звѣрь ходить и бѣгать, птица и муха летать, рыба

swim, and worms crawl. See, a soldier is coming
 плавать, и червь ползать. Посмотрѣть, солдатъ идти

here; behind him runs a dog. Thou seest, how this
 сюда; за (*instr.*) онъ бѣжать собака. Видѣть, какъ этотъ

swallow flies fast; they fly always so. This mariner
 ласточка летѣть быстро; онъ летать всегда такъ. Сей морякъ

has long sailed on the Black Sea. What is swimming
 долго плавать по (*dat.*) Черный Море. Что плыть

there on the water? The wives of the Slavonians carried
 тамъ на (*prep.*) вода? Жена Славянннхъ носить

water and fetched wood. What dost thou carry in
 вода и таскать дрова. Что ты нести въ (*prep.*)

this bag? See, what a heap of wood this
 этотъ мышокъ? Смотрѣть, какой ваянка дрова этотъ

man is drawing. One saw then what one had not
 человекъ тащить. Видѣть тогда (*gen.*) что не

seen for a long time.

видѣть долговъ.

The enemy dashed into the town and seized the Perfect aspect of duration and of unity.
 Непріятель рѣяться въ (acc.) городъ и кидаться на (acc.)
 booty. It began to lighten. It lightened, there was a
 корысть. Засверкать молнія. Сверкать молнія, гремѣть
 violent clap of thunder, the earth trembled, the church
 сѣльный громъ, земліа дрожать, церковь
 was shaken. My brother went to bed, and began to snore.
 затрясаться. Мой братъ лечь и захрапѣть.
 He gave a loud snore and awoke. May I hope, that
 Храпѣть громко и просыпаться. Мочь я надѣяться, что
 my lyre will touch once more your hard heart? The sun
 мой лира трогать ещё вашъ хладный сердце? Солнце
 began to shine, but not for a long time; it shone for a moment
 заблестать, но не надолго, блестя
 and disappeared. We have thrown out of the window all
 и скрываться. Я выбрасывать за (acc.) окно весь
 the sweepings; among the sweepings we have thrown out
 соръ; въ (pref.) соръ я выбрасывать
 also a paper of importance.
 и бумага важная.

Last year I often went to the town. Socrates Iterative aspect.
 (gen.) Прѣшлый годъ я ходить въ (acc.) городъ. Сократъ
 was accustomed to say. The Germans had long inhabited
 говорить. Нѣмецъ издавна жить
 Novgorod. When living at Moscow, I
 въ (pref.) Нѣвгородъ. Жить въ (pref.) Москва, я
 often went to the monastery of the Trinity. In my youth
 ѣздить въ (acc.) Лавра Троицкій. Въ (acc.) молодой лѣто
 I often lived in the country.
 я жить въ (pref.) деревня.

If the stones could speak, they would teach thee Conditional and Subjunctive.
 Если бы камень мочь говорить, онъ научить бы ты

prudence. If any one had come to us (*gen.*) острѣжность. Если бѣ кто нибудь войти къ (*dat.*) я at this moment, he would have seen us in despair въ (*acc.*) этотъ минута, онъ увидѣть бы я въ (*prep.*) отчаяніе, and would have heard our groans and our sighs. There и услышать бы нашъ стenanіе и нашъ вздохъ. Есть are few things in the world, on which I мало (*gen.*) предметъ въ (*prep.*) свѣтъ, на (*acc.*) который я have not fixed my attention. There was no heart не обращать бы (*gen.*) вниманіе. Быть (*gen.*) не сердце so insensible that it did not melt into tears. такой каменный, который не изливаться бы въ (*prep.*) слеза.

The different tenses and aspects.

This soldier has served long and has received for his service a pension. It is not every soldier that will obtain *пенсию.* Не всякій *выслуживать* it with such distinction. He was in many онъ съ (*instr.*) такой отличіе. Онъ быть въ (*prep.*) много battles and distinguished himself everywhere by his *сраженіе*, и *отличаться* *вездѣ* (*instr.*) блиста- markable courage. He distinguished himself particularly тельный храбрость. Онъ *отличаться* *особенно* at the capture of a battery of the enemies. He mounted при (*prep.*) взятіе баттарей непріятельскій. Онъ взбираться first on the parapet, killed the hostile soldier, and первый на (*acc.*) брустверь, убивать непріятельскій солдатъ, и captured a cannon. For that he was rewarded by a *взять* пушка. За (*acc.*) это онъ награждать (*instr.*) decoration. Afterwards he was rewarded also with other *орденъ.* Потомъ онъ *награждать* и (*instr.*) другой marks of distinction. Now he will return to his country, *отличіе.* Теперь онъ отправляться въ (*acc.*) родина,

will establish himself with his family, and will relate

поселаться въ (*prep.*) свой семья, и разсказывать о (*prep.*)

his campaigns, how he marched against the Turks and
свой походъ, какъ ходить на (*acc.*) Түрокъ и

the French, how he beat the enemy, how he endured hunger,
Французъ, какъ бить врагъ, какъ терпѣть голодъ,

suffered from his wounds, and consoled himself with the
страдать отъ (*gen.*) рана, и утѣшаться (*instr.*)

thought that he is serving his sovereign with heart and
мысль, что онъ служить (*dat.*) свой Государь (*instr.*) сердце и

soul. Trust in me.

душѣ. Уновѣть на (*acc.*) я.

THE PARTICIPLE.

66.—The *participles* (причастія) have, as a part of the verb (§ 53) *voice*, *aspect* and *tense*; and, as adjectives, that they may agree with their substantive, they have *gender*, *number* and *case*. As regards voice, they are *active* or *neuter* (or, with the pronoun *ся*, pronominal) and *passive*. They have the same number of aspects as the verbs whence they are derived, but they have only two tenses, the *present* and *preterit*.

Division of
the parti-
ciples.

67.—The *active* and *neuter* (as also the pronominal) participles are formed as follows:

Active and
neuter par-
ticiples.

1. The *present* participle is formed from the third person plural of the present indicative by changing the termination *мъ* into *ущи* (neut. *уще*, fem. *уща*), and this without any exception; e. g. дѣлающіи,

making; любящій, *loving*; кричащій, *crying*; несущій, *bearing* (from дѣлаютъ, любятъ, кричатъ, несутъ).

2. The *preterit* or past participle is formed from the preterit indicative, by changing *лѣ* into *вшій*, and *ѣ* (in such verbs as have not *лѣ* in the preterit) into *шій* (neut. *шее*, fem. *шая*); e. g. дѣлавшій, *having made*; носившій, *having borne*; поту́хшій, *being extinguished*; тёршій, *having rubbed* (from дѣлалъ, носилъ, поту́хъ, тёръ). An exception to this rule is found in some irregular verbs in *бу* and *ту*, which, though forming their preterit in *лѣ*, change *у* of the present (or of the future) into *шій*; these are: блю́дшій, *having kept*; ве́дшій, *having lead*; па́дшій (and па́вшій), *having fallen*; пряд́шій, *having spun*; плёт́шій, *having plaited*; мет́шій, *having swept*; обрѣ́тшій, *having found*; цвѣ́тшій, *having flowered* (from блю́ду, ве́ду, па́ду, пряд́у, плет́у, мет́у, обрѣ́ту and цвѣ́ту),⁹ and also увя́дшій, *being faded*; шѣ́дшій, *having gone*; чѣ́тшій, *having counted* (from увя́ну, ид́у and чту).

Passive
participles.

68.—The *passive* participles, which are only formed from active verbs, are used both with the full and the apocopated termination, ending: *a*) in the *present*, in *емый*, *имый* or *омый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*) in the full, and in *емъ*, *имъ* or *омъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*) in the apocopated termination, *b*) in the *preterit*, in *нный* or *тый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*) in the full, and in *нъ* or *тъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*) in the apocopated termination.

1. The *present* participle is formed from the first person plural of the present indicative, by chang-

ing the termination *мѣ* into *мый*, as: *дѣлаемый*, *being made*; *любимый*, *being loved* (from *дѣлаемѣ* and *любимѣ*). But *движу*, *I move*, and *борю*, *I conquer*, from *движимый* and *боримый* (instead of *движѣмый* and *борѣмый*). The irregular verbs with the first person in *ѣмѣ* (i. e. with the accent), have *омый*, resuming the guttural consonant; e. g. *зовомый*, *being called*; *трясомый*, *being shaken*; *берегомый*, *being kept*; *пекомый*, *being baked* (from *зовѣмѣ*, *трясѣмѣ*, *бережѣмѣ*, *печѣмѣ*), and in like manner *сосомый*, *being sucked*; *искомый*, *being sought* (from *сосѣмѣ* and *ищемѣ*).

2. The *preterit* participle is formed of the preterit of the indicative by changing *мѣ* of the terminations *алѣ*, *ялѣ* and *лѣ*, into *нный* with permutation of the commutable consonants or with intercalation of the consonant *л*, as also in the first person of the present; *мѣ* and *ѣ* of the terminations *олѣ*, *нулѣ* and *ѣ*, into *тый*; e. g. *дѣланный*, *done*; *разсѣянный*, *dispersed*; *видѣнный*, *seen*; *палѣнный*, *burnt*; *явлен- ный*, *shown*; *винчѣнный*, *screwed*; *колѣтый*, *pricked*; *дви- ну- тый*, *moved*; *тѣр- тый*, *rubbed* (from *дѣлалѣ*, *разсѣялѣ*, *видѣлѣ*, *палѣлѣ*, *явилѣ*, *винтилѣ*, *колѣлѣ*, *дви- нулѣ*, *тѣрѣ*).

The passive participles of the irregular verbs, which also present some irregularities in their formation, have been given in the List of the irregular verbs, pages 138—141.

69.—The participles, being used as adjectives, and as such agreeing with their substantive in gender, number and case, are declined like the qualifying adjectives (§ 40, parad. 4). The active and neuter participles are only used in the full ter- Declension
of the
participles.

mination, while the passive participles are used both in the full and the apocopated.

Passive
verbs

70.—The passive participles, both present and preterit, with the apocopated termination, joined to the auxiliary verb *быть*, form what is called the passive verb (страдательные глаголы); e. g. *сынъ (есть) любимъ своимъ отцемъ*, *the son is loved by his father*; *ученикъ былъ награжденъ за прилежаніе*, *the scholar has been rewarded for his assiduity*. We have here to remark that from the present and preterit of the passive participles are formed two aspects of the passive verb: the imperfect and the perfect aspect. As regards the present, preterit and future tenses, they are determined by the auxiliary verb *быть*, as seen below.

1) *Imperfect asp.*

2) *Perfect asp.*

- | | |
|---|----------------------|
| 1. <i>Present</i> : . . я (есть) награждаемъ. | я (есть) награжденъ. |
| 2. <i>Preterit</i> : . . я былъ награждаемъ. | я былъ награжденъ. |
| 3. <i>Future</i> : . . я буду награждаемъ. | я буду награжденъ. |

EXERCISES ON THE PARTICIPLES.

Active and
neuter par-
ticiples.

The man who loves truth, hates falsehood. The child
 Человѣкъ любить правда, ненавидѣть ложь. Дитя
 that bathes; the dog that attacks passers by. The
 купаться; собака бросаться на (acc.) прохожій.
 tradesman who received the goods from London,
 Купецъ, получать товаръ изъ (gen.) Лондонъ,
 sold them advantageously. The tradesman who has received
 продавать онъ выгодно. Купецъ получить
 the goods from London, has sold them advantageously.
 товаръ изъ (gen.) Лондонъ, продать онъ выгодно.

Suffering from illness, he seeks relief. Light
Страда́ть (*instr.*) боле́знь, иска́ть (*gen.*) обле́гче́нiе. Заже́чь

the candle which has gone out, and wipe the window
свеча́ поту́хнуть, и вы́тереть сте́кло

which is frozen. Glory to the hero who has saved his
замёрзнуть. Сла́ва геро́й спасти́ свой

country. The roaring lion, the bellowing ox, the barking
оте́чество. Рыка́ть ле́въ, мыча́ть бы́къ, лая́ть

dog, the crowing cock, the cooing dove, express their
соба́ка, пѣть пѣту́хъ, воркова́ть го́лубь, выража́ть свой

feelings and wants.

чу́ство и жела́нiе.

The sea agitated by the winds frightens the sailors. *Passive*
Мо́ре, волнува́ть вѣтра, устраша́ть пла́вце́. *participles.*

The daughter beloved by her father, seeks to deserve his
До́чь, любя́ть оте́цъ, иска́ть заслужи́вать о́нъ

love. One must succour the unfortunate man, harassed
любо́вь. До́лжно помога́ть (*dat.*) несча́стный, гна́ть

by fate and pursued by disasters. This is skimmed milk,
судьба́ и преслѣ́довать неуда́ча. Э́тотъ сня́ть моло́ко,

and here is rappee snuff. It is a loaded gun. In the
и вотъ терѣ́ть таба́къ. Э́тотъ заря́дить ру́жьё. На (*prep.*)

market they sell killed geese, tarred ropes, little
рыно́къ продава́ться бить гу́съ, смоли́ть верѣ́вка, откорми́ть

sucking pigs, and shorn sheep.

поро́сенокъ и стри́чь о́вца.

Russia is inhabited by various nations. Good sovereigns *Passive*
Росси́я обита́ть (*instr.*) мно́го наро́дъ. До́брый госуда́рь *verbs.*

are loved by their subjects and respected by their neighbours.

лю́бить свой по́дданный и уважа́ть сосѣ́дъ.

The Tartars have been vanquished and defeated in the
Татаря́тъ побѣди́ть и разби́ть на (*prep.*)

plains of Koulikof. Thy labours will be crowned with
 поле Куликовъ. Твой трудъ увѣнчать (*instr.*)

success. Nouns are declined, and verbs conjugated. This
 успѣхъ. Имя склонять и глаголь спрягать. Сей

great captain will be revered by posterity. Moscow
 великій полководецъ чтить въ (*prep.*) потомство. Москвѣ

has been devastated and burnt by the enemies. This gun
 разорить и сжечь врагъ. Э тотъ ружьѣ

is charged. This book is well bound.
 зарядить. Э тотъ книга прекрасно переплетать.

THE ADVERB AND THE GERUND.

Division of
 the adverbs.

71.—The *adverbs* (нарѣчія) are divided into different classes according to their meaning:

1. Adverbs of *quality* or *manner* (нарѣчія качества), e. g. такъ, *thus*; иначе, *otherwise*; хорошо, *well*; худо, *badly*; нарочно, *intentionally*; скоро, *quickly*; напрасно, *in vain*; наугадъ, *at random*; заодно, *by agreement*; по-своему, *in one's own way*, &c.

2. Adverbs of *time* (времени), e. g. вчера, *yesterday*; сегодня, *to-day*; завтра, *to-morrow*; утромъ, *in the morning*; вечеромъ, *in the evening*; нынѣ, *now*; теперь, *at present*; тогда, *then*; послѣ, *afterwards*; прежде, *before*; иногда, *sometimes*; тотчасъ, *presently*, &c.

3. Adverbs of *place* (мѣста): *a*) such as indicate a place without motion: здѣсь, *here*; тамъ, *there*; нигдѣ, *nowhere*; дома, *at home*; вездѣ, *everywhere*; *b*) such as indicate the place to which the action

is directed: *сюда́, hither*; *туда́, thither*; *никуда́, nowhere*; *домой, home*; *всюду, everywhere*; c) such as indicate the place whence the action proceeds; e. g. *отсю́да, from here*; *отту́да, from there*; *извне́, from without*; *снару́жи, from the exterior*; *отвсю́ду, from all sides*, &c.

4. Adverbs of *order* (порядка); e. g. *во-пе́рвыхъ, firstly*; *во-вторы́хъ, secondly*; *потомъ, subsequently*, &c. •

5. Adverbs of *quantity* (ко́личества); e. g. *до-во́льно, enough*; *ма́ло, little*; *мно́го, much*; *не́сколько, some*, &c.

6. *Implicit* (замѣнительныя) adverbs, as: *да, yes*; *нѣтъ, no*; *молъ, де, says he*, &c.

7. *Interrogative* (вопросительныя) adverbs; e. g. *когда́, when?* *доко́ль, how long?* *гдѣ, where* (without motion)? *куда́, where* (with motion)? *отку́да, whence?* *ско́лько, how much?* *зачѣмъ, why?* &c.

72.—Adverbs are for the most part derivatives, being formed from nouns, adjectives, pronouns or verbs. Nouns in the instrumental and other cases are often employed adverbially: e. g. *кря́гомъ, in a circle*; *верхо́мъ, on horseback*; *да́ромъ, gratis*; *на показъ, for show*; *въ торо́пахъ, in haste*, &c. Every qualifying adjective, in the apocopated termination of the neuter gender, can become an adverb, as: *окра́сить бѣло́, синѣ, to dye white, blue*; *поступа́тъ хоро́шó, to conduct himself well*. The possessive and circumstantial adjectives form adverbs of manner by means of the preposition *по*, as: *по-человѣ́чьи, as a man*; *по-ру́сски, in Russian*;

Formation
of the ad-
verbs.

по-дру́жески, *as a friend*; по-звѣ́рному, *like beasts*; по-мо́ему, *according to my view*.

Degrees of
comparison.

73.—The adverbs formed from qualifying adjectives admit of degrees of comparison; e. g. у́мно, *wisely*, and у́мнѣ, *more wisely*; хоро́шо, *well*, and лу́чше, *better*; поко́рко, *humbly*, and всепокорнѣ́йше, *very humbly*. We must here remark that the comparative of the adverbs is the same as that of the adjectives in the apocopated termination, with the exception of the five adverbs: бо́лѣ, *more*; ме́нѣ, *less*; до́лѣ, *longer*; да́лѣ, *further*; то́нѣ, *more finely*, which must be distinguished from the adjectives бо́льше, *greater*; ме́ньше, *less*; до́льше, *longer*; да́льше, *more distant*; то́ньше, *finer*. The qualifying adverbs can also be used in the diminutive and augmentative aspects; e. g. синевáто, *bluishly*; малéнько, *a little*; немно́жко, *not much*; поху́же, *a little worse*; преу́мно, *very wisely*.

Gerunds.

74.—The *gerunds* (дѣприча́стія) are nothing but *verbal adverbs* formed from active or neuter participles. They have two terminations in each of the two tenses, viz: *a*) in the *present*, я or (after a hissing letter) а, and ючи or учи, e. g. дѣлая and дѣлаючи, *in doing*; дыша́ and дышючи, *in breathing*; неся́ and несючи, *in bearing*; *b*) in the *preterit*, въ and вши; e. g. дѣлавъ and дѣлавши, *after having done*; проси́въ and проси́вши, *having prayed*, remarking however that verbs which have not the letter л in the preterit, have only the termination ши, e. g. уме́рши, *being dead*; поту́хши, *being*

extinguished. The same is the case with the pronominal verbs; e. g. *учившись, after having learned;* *возвратившись, having returned.*

The full terminations of the gerunds *ючи* and *вши* are more commonly employed in familiar language, while the apocopated termination *я* and *въ* are more usual in the written tongue.

EXERCISES ON THE ADVERBS AND THE GERUNDS.

Come here, for I live here. Where is your brother? *Adverbs.*

Пойти сюда, ибо я жить здесь. Где ваш братъ?

He is not at home. Where did he go yesterday evening?
Онъ нѣтъ дома. Куда онъ поѣхать вчера вечеромъ?

Thou judgest wisely, and thy brother judges more wisely. I
Ты судить умно, а твой братъ . Я

walk quick, and thou walkest quicker. You speak Russian
ходить шибко, а ты . Ты говорить по-русьски

purely, and your sister speaks it more purely. To-morrow
чисто, а вашъ сестрица . Завтра

we shall go very far, and in a year we shall go still
я поѣхать очень далеко, а чрезъ (*acc.*) годъ ещё

further. Thou singest well, but she sings better. I beg
. Ты пѣть хорошо, но онъ . Я просить

you very earnestly. I thank you very humbly.
ты убѣдительно. Я благодарить ты покорно.

While walking on the bank of the river, I enjoy *Gerunds.*

Гулять на (*prep.*) берегъ рѣки, я наслаждаться

the freshness of the evening. While pitying the unfortunate,
(*instr.*) прохлада вечеръ. Жалѣть о (*prep.*) несчастный,

try to aid them. I instruct you, because I wish
стараться помогать онъ. Я учить ты, желать

you well, and because I hope, that you will make progress
ты (*gen.*) добро́, и наде́яться, что ты успѣ́вать

in the sciences. When thou dost not know how to do
въ (*prep.*) нау́ка. Не уме́ть де́лать (*gen.*)

a thing, ask advice without blushing. Do right,
что нибу́дь, проси́ть (*gen.*) сове́тъ, не красне́ть. Де́лать добро́,

without fearing any man. One must not eat when
не боя́ться (*gen.*) никто́. До́лжно не ѣсть

lying down. In serving our country, and dying for
лежа́ть. Служить (*dat.*) оте́чество, и умира́ть за (*acc.*)

it, we do our duty. Having received your letter, and
онъ, я исполна́ть свой дол́гъ. Получи́ть вашъ пи́сьмо́, и

having learned what you want, I have answered imme-
узна́ть (*gen.*) что ты же́лать, я отве́чать неме́-

diately. After having dined, stop at home. Having
мгнѣнно. Отобе́дать, остава́ться до́ма. Напи-

written your letter, I placed it in an envelope, and
са́тъ пи́сьмо́, положи́ть въ (*acc.*) кувѣ́ртъ, и

sealed it, put it in the post. Having returned
запеча́татъ, отдава́ть онъ на (*acc.*) почта́. При́йти

home, I set about writing. After being married, he repaired
домо́й, я съе́сть писа́ть. Жени́ться, онъ поѣ́хать

to the country. Having remained an hour with him,
въ (*acc.*) дере́вня. Просидѣ́ть (*acc.*) часъ у (*gen.*) онъ,

I returned home; after undressing myself and going to bed,
я по́йти домо́й; разде́ваться и лечь,

I fell asleep immediately.

я усну́ть скоро́.

THE PREPOSITION.

75.—The *prepositions* (предлоги) of the Russian language are *simple* (безъ, на, по) or *compound* (изъ-за́, изъ-пóдъ); the following is a general list of them: Division of the prepositions.

Безъ (безо), without.	Отъ (ото), from; since; out of.
Вз- or воз- (взо), up, <i>sup.</i>	По (па-), about; until; after.
Въ (во), in, into, to, at.	Подъ (подо-), under, underneath.
Вы-, out, without, <i>ex.</i>	Пра-, (<i>indicating a removed relationship</i> ; прáдвѣть, <i>great grandfather</i>).
Для, for.	Пре- or пере-, beyond, <i>trans.</i> ; <i>re.</i>
До, as far as, until.	Предъ or пѣредъ (предо), before.
За, behind; after; for.	При, near; in the time of.
Изъ (изо), from.	Про, of, about.
Изъ-за́, from behind.	Ради, for the sake of.
Изъ-пóдъ, from under.	Раз- or роз- (разо), apart, <i>se.</i>
Къ (ко), to, towards; for.	Сквозъ, through.
На, on; against.	Съ (со, су-), since; about; with.
Надъ (надо), upon, over.	Съ (со, су-), since; about; with.
Низ- (низо-), down, <i>de.</i>	У, at; by, near. [<i>ing.</i>]
О or обѣ (обо), of; round; against.	Черезъ or чѣрезъ, through; dur-

The following adverbs also belong to the class of prepositions:

Близъ, near.	О'коло, round; about.
Вдоль, along.	О'крестъ, around.
Вмѣсто, instead of.	Опрѣчь, except, excepting.
Внутрь <i>and</i> внутрі, within.	Поверхъ, upon, above.
Внѣ, out of, without.	Пóдлѣ, beside.
Возлѣ, beside.	Позади <i>and</i> позáдъ, behind.
Вопреки, against, in spite of.	Пóслѣ, after.
Крóмѣ, besides, except.	Прѣжде, before.
Мѣжду or мѣжъ, between, among.	Прóтивъ or протѣву, against.
Мѣмо, past, by.	Сверхъ, above; besides.
Назадѣ, behind.	Сзадѣ or созадѣ, from behind.
Насупротѣвъ, opposite.	Средѣ <i>and</i> средъ, in the middle.

Certain adverbs, formed from qualifying adjectives, are also used as prepositions; e. g. *относительно*, *in reference to*; *касательно*, *concerning*. The same is the case with certain gerunds, as: *исключая*, *excepting*; *не смотря на*, *not withstanding*, and also some nouns in different cases, as: *въ разсужденіи*, *in consideration of*; *посредствомъ*, *by means of*, &c.

76—The prepositions in every language have a twofold use. In the first place they are used, as prefixes, in the formation of the different parts of speech, of which they become an integral part; e. g. *безуміе*, *absurdity*; *взглядъ*, *look*, *западъ*, *the west*; *обольщать*, *to seduce*; *насынокъ*, *the son-in-law*; *правнукъ*, *the great-grand-son*; *сумерки*, *twilight*; *чрезвычайный*, *extraordinary*, &c. Secondly, as particles of speech, they are placed before nouns and pronouns to indicate the relations of the objects; e. g. *человѣкъ безъ ума*, *a man without talent*; *про́сьба до судьи*, *a request to the judge*; *письмо́ къ другу*, *a letter to a friend*; *ска́зка о лиси́цѣ*, *the tale of the fox*, &c.

These examples show that some prepositions are used conjointly and separately, while others of them can only be employed in one of these ways. Such as are only used *separately*, are: *для*, *къ* (*ко*), *ради*, *сквозь*, *изъ-за́* and *изъ-подо́*. Such as are only used *conjointly*, are: *въ* (*воз*, *взо*), *вы*, *ни́з* (*низо*), *па*, *пра*, *пре* (*пере*), *раз* (*роз*, *разо*) and *су*, and for this reason are called *inseparable* prepositions. All the other prepositions may be used both conjointly and separately.

77.—The separable prepositions require the complementary word to be put in a certain case. Thus: Government of the prepositions.

Безъ, для, до, изъ, изъ-за, изъ-подъ, отъ, рѣди and у, as well as almost all the adverbs used prepositionally, require the *genitive*.

Къ and the adverb вопреки require the *dative*.

Про, сквозь and чрезъ govern the *accusative*.

Надъ requires the *instrumental*, as does also the adverb между or межъ, though used occasionally with the *genitive*.

При governs the *prepositional*.

За, подъ and предъ require the *accusative*, when they indicate motion towards an object, and the *instrumental* when they design repose.

Въ, на and о or объ govern the *accusative*, when they indicate a change of place, and the *prepositional*, when there is no motion indicated from one place to another.

Съ governs the *genitive*, the *accusative* and the *instrumental*. With the *genitive* it means *from*, *since*; with the *accusative*, *as*, *about*, *of the size of*, and with the *instrumental*, *with*.

По requires the *dative*, the *accusative* and the *prepositional*. With the *dative* it signifies *about*; with the *accusative*, *as far as*, and with the *prepositional*, *after*.

• EXERCISES ON THE PREPOSITIONS.

Without hope it is impossible to live in the world. From
Безъ надежда нельзя жить въ свѣтъ. Отъ
the river to the forest there are two versts. Of what are you
до лѣсъ (есть) два верста. О что ты

talking? We labour for the public good. Between the
говори́ть? Я труди́ться для о́бщій блага́. Ме́жду

house and the garden there is a large court with stables.
домъ и садъ (есть) простран́ный дворъ съ коню́шня.

For God's sake do not grieve. The love of the sovereign
Ради́ Богъ не уныва́ть. Любо́вь къ госуда́рь

and of one's native land. He lives at his uncle. The soldier
и оте́чество. Онъ жи́ть у сво́ей дядя́. Солда́тъ

started from behind the bush. The ray of the sun passes
выско́чить изъ-за́ ку́стъ. Лучъ со́лнечный проника́тъ

through the water. This man is at death's door.
сквозь вода́. Э́тотъ челове́къ (есть) при сме́рти.

The bird flies under the clouds. I have put the book under
Пти́ца лета́ть подъ о́блако. Я положи́ть кни́га подъ

the table. Sit down to table and remain at table. My
сто́лъ. Садит́ся за сто́лъ и сидѣ́тъ за сто́лъ. Мой

brother starts for Moscow, because his wife lives at
братъ ѣ́хать въ Москв́а, пото́му что онъ жена́ жи́ть въ

Moscow. The eagle is perched on the tree. This glass
Москв́а. Орёлъ сидѣ́тъ на дере́во. Э́тотъ рю́мка

has been broken into several pieces. I am angry with my
разбива́ться на ме́лкій ча́сть. Я доса́довать на мой

brother for his laziness. Never mind the affairs of others.
братъ за онъ лѣ́ность. Не заботи́ться о дѣ́ло чужо́й.

My friend has wounded himself against the corner of the table.
Мой дру́гъ ушиба́ться объ у́голь сто́лъ.

The water runs from the roof. Here are trees with leaves,
Вода́ течь съ кро́вля. Вотъ дере́во съ 'листь,

but without blossoms. This dog will be of the size of
но безъ цвѣ́тъ. Э́тотъ соба́ка бы́ть съ

a cow. The children run about the court and about the
коро́ва. Дѣ́тя бѣ́гать по дво́рь и по

garden. We worked from the first to the fifth of August.
садъ. Я рабѣтать отъ пѣрвый по пѣтый числѣ А'вгустъ.

He wears mourning for his brother.

Онъ носѣть трауръ по свой братъ.

THE CONJUNCTION.

78.—The following is a general list of the Russian *conjunctions* (союзы).

А, and; but.	Не только . . . но, и, not only
Буде, if, provided.	. . . . . but even.
Будто, будто бы, that, as if.	Нежели, than.
Впрѣчемъ, as for the rest.	Ни, ниже, neither, nor; not
Да, and, but; let.	Но, but. [even.
Дабы, that, in order that.	Однако, however.
Для того что, because.	Посему, then.
Если and если, if, in case,	Потому что, because.
when.	Правда, it is true.
Же or жъ, then, also.	Пускай or пусть, let.
И, and; also, too.	Сколь ни, whatever.
Ибо, because.	Слѣдовательно, consequently,
Или or иль, or.	То, then. [then.
И такъ, therefore.	Того ради, therefore.
Какъ, as, when.	Только and токмо, only, merely.
Какъ-то, for instance.	Хотя, though, although.
Когда, when, whenever.	Хотя бы, even though.
Ли or ль (<i>interrogative</i>); if,	Что, that.
whether.	Чтобы or чтобъ, that, in order
Либо, either, or.	that.
Лишь, just, as soon as.	Чѣмъ, than.

There are other parts of speech which perform the office of conjunctions; such are the relative pronouns: кто, что, который, кой, *who, which*; чей, *whose*; какой, *which*; the interrogative adverbs: гдѣ, куда, *where*; отку́да, *whence*; доко́ль, *how long*; ско́лько, сколь, *how much*; and others: такъ,

thus; пока, as much as; ТѢМЪ . . . ЧѢМЪ, so much the more . . . that; ЧѢМЪ . . . ТѢМЪ, the more . . . the more; частью, in part, &c.

EXERCISES ON THE CONJUNCTIONS.

My uncle was born and lived at Moscow, and not at Tver.

Мой дѣдя родиться и жить въ Москвѣ, а не въ Тверь.

Do you know that our tutor is indisposed? If you do
Знать ли что нашъ учитель нездоровый? Ежели ты

not come I shall be angry. Ask * him if he
не прѣзжать, то я осердиться. Спросить у онъ, ли онъ

will come, or if he has the intention to stop at home. Не
хотѣть ѣхать, или вознамѣриться оставаться дома. Онъ

distresses himself more about his brother than about his sister.

забѣдниться болѣе о братъ, нежели о сестра.

It is more agreeable to do good to others, than to receive

Пріятно дѣлать добро другой, чѣмъ получать

benefits one's self. Let him come; let them go.

благодареніе самъ. Пусть онъ прійти; пускай онъ уѣхать.

Do not let the sun find you on your bed. Long live

Не да солнце заставать ты на ложѣ. Да здравствовать

the Tzar. The more thou learnest diligently, the more study will

Царь. Чѣмъ ты учишься прилежно, тѣмъ ученіе быть

be easy to thee.

лёгкій для ты.

THE INTERJECTION.

79.—The principal *interjections* (междомѣтія) of the Russian language are the following: ура! га! expressing *joy*; ахъ! охъ! увы! ахтѣ! expressive of *pain*; ай! ухъ! ой! indicate *fear*; тоу! indicates *aversion*; уфъ! expresses *fatigue*; ну! нѣже! are used to *encourage*; стъ! тсъ! to impose *silence*; ай! рей! to *call*.

SECOND PART

SYNTAX.

80.—*Syntax*, which treats of the union of the different elements of speech, and of the order in which those different elements ought to be arranged, is divided into three parts: 1) the *concord* of words (согласованіе), or the syntax of agreement, which teaches how to express the union existing between the words forming the proposition; 2) the *dependence* of words (управлѣніе), or the syntax of government, which teaches the manner of indicating the relation existing between a term and its antecedent; and 3) the *construction* of words (размѣщеніе), or the place to be assigned to the single words in the proposition, and to the propositions in the period.

Division of
Syntax

CONCORD OF WORDS.

81.—The following are the rules of the concord of words in the Russian language:

1. The *subject* (подлежащее), *attribute* (сказуемое) and *copula* (связка) must agree in gender, number and person; e. g. Божъ есть всемогущъ, *God is almighty*; науки (суть) полезны, *the sciences are useful*; Москва была славна, *Moscow has been celebrated*; Азія будетъ спокойна, *Asia will be tranquil*; солнце взошло, *the sun has risen*. — When the attribute is a noun, it retains its gender and number; as: орёлъ есть хищная птица, *the eagle*

is a bird of prey; but the movable nouns agree with the subject; as: *луна́ есть спутница́ земли́, the moon is the satellite of the earth.*

To this rule there are the following exceptions: 1) The personal pronoun of the 2d person, with its determinatives, as also the verb and the attribute when an adjective is used, from politeness, in the *plural* instead of the singular; but when the attribute is a noun, it remains in the singular; e. g. *вы сами́, другъ мой, нездоровъ, you yourself, my friend, are indisposed; будьте свидѣтелями, be a witness.* — 2) The verb *быть*, in the sense of *exist*, though the subject be plural, remains in the *singular* in the 3d person of the present; but in the preterit and future it agrees in number with its subject; e. g. *у него́ есть деньги́, he has money; у него́ были́ деньги́, he had money; у него́ будутъ деньги́, he will have money.* — 2) In the case of nouns indicating a title, the verb and the attribute agree in gender with the sex of the person who bears the title; as: *Его́ Величество (Король) нездоровъ, His Majesty (the King) is indisposed; Ея́ Сіятельство (Графиня) была́ здѣсь, Her Excellency (the Countess) has been here; Его́ Свѣтлость (Князь) прогуливался, His Highness (the Prince) has taken a walk.*

2. Determinative words agree with the noun they determine, in *gender, number and case*; e. g. *Великій Петръ преобразовалъ обширную Россію, Peter the Great has regenerated the vast Russian empire.* If the determinative is a noun, it only agrees in *case*; e. g. *слёзы, утѣшеніе несчастныхъ, у него́ изсякли, tears, the consolation of the unhappy, were dried up within him.*

3. Two or more subjects in the singular require the verb and the attribute in the *plural*; e. g. *лѣность и прѣздность (суть) вредны, laziness and inactivity are pernicious.* If the two nouns in the singular are united by an alternative conjunction,

the verb and the attribute must be in the *singular*; e. g. зима или весна́ тебѣ́ приятна? *is it winter or spring that is agreeable to thee?*

4. The infinitive, when it performs the office of subject, requires the verb and the attribute to be put in the *neuter singular*; this is also the case with the adverbs много, *much*; мало, *little*; сколько, *how much*; нѣсколько, *some*; e. g. умирать за отечество (есть) славно и приятно, *it is noble and pleasant to die for one's country*; сколько пришло семействъ, *how many families have arrived?*

5. When two nouns, the one appellative and the other proper, both relating to the same object, differ in number or gender, the adjective or verb agrees with the *appellative* noun; e. g. древній городъ Ойвы, *the ancient city of Thebes*; славная рѣка Дунай, *the celebrated river Danube*. When there are two nouns of different genders, the adjective agrees with the *masculine*; e. g. славные царіи и царіцы, *the celebrated kings and queens*. In the verbs the first person has the priority over the two others, and the second over the third; as: ты и я гуляемъ вмѣстѣ, *thou and I walk together*; ты и онъ не знаете что дѣлать, *thou and he know not what to do*.

6. The numerals compounded of одинъ, *one*, require the noun in the *singular* (§ 43); e. g. двадцать одинъ рубль, *twenty one rubles*; тысяча одна ночь, *the thousand and one nights*.

7. The relative pronouns agree in *gender* and *number* with the noun to which they relate, but they take the *case* that the verb of the phrase in which

they occur, may require; e. g. я знаю дѣло, о которомъ вы говорите, *I know the affair of which you speak*. The pronoun чей, occurring always with a noun, must agree in every respect with that noun; e. g. тотъ, въ чьихъ рукахъ моя судьба, *he in whose hands is my destiny*.

EXERCISES ON THE CONCORD OF WORDS.

Winter is agreeable. Men are mortal. Novgorod was
Зима пріятный. Человѣкъ смѣртный. Новгородъ быть
rich. Russia is a vast empire. The Wolga is the king
богатый. Россія быть обширный имперія. Волга быть царь
of the rivers of Russia. My friend, you shall be satisfied.
рѣка рѣсскій. Мой пріятель, ты быть довольный.

We have great stores. I shall have to-morrow some
У я быть большой запасъ. У я быть завтра
money. Her Majesty (*the Empress*) is gone out. His
дѣньги. Онъ Величество (*Императрица*) выѣхать. Онъ

Excellency (*the general*) is gone. His Imperial
Превосходительство (*генералъ*) уѣхать. Онъ Императорскій
Highness (*the Grand-Duke*) has been satisfied. Geography
Высочество (*Великій Князь*) быть довольный. Географія
and history are very useful branches of knowledge.
и исторія быть весьма полезный знаніе.

It is difficult to be silent. How many children were there?
Трудный молчать. Сколько дѣтѣ быть тамъ?

Moscow is celebrated; the town of Moscow is celebrated.
Москва знаменитый; городъ .

China is densely peopled; the empire of China is densely
Китай многолюдный; государство

4 peopled. He has thirty one horses. The book
У ОНЪ БЫТЬ ТРІДЦАТЬ ОДИНЪ ЛОШАДЬ. КНИГА,

which you are reading, is very amusing. Here is
КОТОРЫЙ ТЫ ЧИТАТЬ, ОЧЕНЬ ЗАБАВНЫЙ. ВОТЪ

the man by whose works we profit.
ЧЕЛОВѢКЪ, (instr.) ЧЕЙ ТРУДЪ ПОЛЬЗОВАТЬСЯ

DEPENDENCE OF WORDS.

82.—For the *dependence* or government of words in Russian the following rules are to be observed:

1. Words which, having the same root, appear in the form of substantive, adjective or adverb, as also in the form of verb, participle of gerund, require the same cases; e. g. вредить ближнему, *to do harm to his neighbour*; вредящій ближнему, *doing harm to his neighbour*; вредя ближнему, *in doing harm to his neighbour*; вредъ ближнему, *the harm done to his neighbour*; вредный ближнему, *prejudicial to his neighbour*; вредно ближнему, *prejudicially to his neighbour*.

2. The governing power of the verbs depends on their meaning: the same verb used in different significations requires different cases; e. g. говорить правду, *to speak the truth*; говорить о дѣлѣ, *to speak of an affair*; говорить языкомъ, *to speak a language*; говорить съ другомъ, *to speak with a friend*; отказать просителю, *to refuse a petitioner*; отказать въ просьбѣ, *to refuse a request*; отказать домъ, *to bequeath a house*; отказать отъ должности, *to deprive of an office*.

3. The prepositions communicate to the verbs to which they are joined a double quality. In the first place they express simply the commencement of the action, its duration and its completion; as: игралъ на флѣйтѣ, *he played on the flute*; заигралъ на флѣйтѣ, *he began to play on the flute*; поигравъ на флѣйтѣ, занялся онъ чтеніемъ, *after having played a little on the flute, he busied himself with reading*; вчера сыгралъ на флѣйтѣ претрудное сочиненіе, *yesterday he played on the flute a very difficult composition*; онъ доигралъ на флѣйтѣ начатое на скрипкѣ,

he finished playing on the flute what he had begun on the violin; *отыгралъ на флейтѣ въ полночь*, he ceased playing on the flute at midnight. Secondly the preposition gives to the verb another meaning; e. g. *писать писъмѡ*, to write a letter; *вописать хвалу*, to confer praises upon; *вписать въ книгу*, to inscribe in the book; *выписать изъ книги*, to extract from a book; *записать въ службу*, to enter on the service; *написать адресъ*, to write an address; *отписать къ другу*, to inform a friend; *переписать набѣло*, to make a fair copy; *приписать стрѣчку*, to add a line; *прописать всю службу*, to describe the whole service; *расписать комнату*, to paint a room; *списаться съ пріятелемъ*, to correspond with a friend. The prepositional verbs of the first mentioned class require after them the same preposition and the same case as in the simple form, while those of the second category, in which the addition of a preposition modifies the sense, take after them the preposition with which they are formed, or a corresponding one, as is seen below.

Verbs formed with the preposition which require after them the preposition	возоръзъ,	на; e. g. <i>взойти на гору</i> , to ascend the mountain.
	в ор во,	въ; . <i>вступать въ домъ</i> , to enter in the house.
	вы,	изъ; . <i>выйти изъ лѣсу</i> , to issue from the forest.
	до, . .	до; . <i>добѣхать до города</i> , to go as far as the town.
	за, . .	за; . . <i>закинуть за спину</i> , to throw behind one's self.
	изъ, . .	изъ; . <i>извлечь изъ книги</i> , to extract from a book.
	на, . .	на; . . <i>навьючить на лошадь</i> , to place upon a horse.
	надъ, . .	надъ; . <i>надсматривать надъ дѣтми</i> , to watch over the children.
	низъ, . .	съ; . <i>низлетѣть съ кровля</i> , to fly down from the roof
	отъ, . .	отъ; . <i>оторвать отъ работы</i> , to tear from labour.
	пере, . .	чрезъ; . <i>перескочить чрезъ ровъ</i> , to leap across a ditch.
	подъ, . .	подъ; . <i>подложить подъ голову</i> , to put under his head.
	предъ, . .	предъ; . <i>предстать предъ судей</i> , to present himself before the judges.
	примъ, . .	къ; . . <i>къ другу</i> , to come to a friend.
	про, . .	сквозъ; . <i>пройти сквозъ огонь</i> , to pass through the fire.
	произъ, . .	отъ; . <i>произойти отъ болѣзни</i> , to arise from a disease.
с or со,	разъ, . .	на; . . <i>разрѣзать на части</i> , to cut into pieces.
	съ, . .	съ; . <i>скинуть съ себя</i> , to throw of one's self.

83.—We now give the application of these rules in every case, with the exceptions thereto.

Nominative. In the *nominative* are put: 1) The subject, or the principal member of the proposition; as: *солнце свѣтитъ*, the sun shines; *море шумитъ*, the sea

roars. (The subject with a negative verb is sometimes put in the *genitive*; see below.)—2) The attribute, united to the subject by means of the verb *есть*, *былъ* or *буду*, when it expresses a permanent quality of the subject; as: орёлъ есть птица, *the eagle is a bird*; Адамъ былъ человекъ, *Adam was a man*. The adjective in this occasion is used in the apocopated termination; as: Богъ есть всемогущъ, *God is almighty*; Славяне были храбры, *the Slavonians were brave*. If the attribute does not express some permanent quality of the subject, but only a transitory one and of short duration, it is then put in the *instrumental*; as: мой братъ былъ въ то время кадѣтомъ, *my brother was at that time a cadet*; онъ скоро будетъ генераломъ, *he will soon be a general*. This exception however occurs only with the preterit and the future, never with the present.

In the *vocative* is put the name or denomination Vocative. of the person addressed; e. g. Боже, спаси Царя! *God, save the Tzar!* Господи, помилуй меня! *Lord, have mercy upon me!*

The *accusative* is used: 1) After the active verbs; Accusative. as: птица пьётъ воду, *the bird drinks the water*; я погасилъ свѣчу, *I have put out the candle*; мой сосѣдъ купилъ домъ, *my neighbour has bought a house*. The verbal nouns, formed from these verbs, require the *genitive*; as: питьё воды, *the drinking of the water*; погашеніе свѣчъ, *the putting out of the candle*; покупка дома, *the purchase of a house*. —2) To indicate the duration of an action for a given time or over a given distance; as: я проѣхалъ

всю ночь, *I have written the whole night*; онъ проѣхалъ версту, *he has run a verst*.—3) After the prepositions *въ, на, за, подъ, предъ, про, сквозь, чрезъ, о* or *объ, по* and *съ* (§ 77).

Dative The *dative* is used: 1) With the accusative, to indicate the person to whose gain or loss the action is performed; e. g. ты подалъ милостыню бѣдному, *thou hast given alms to the poor man*.—2) After the verbs formed with the prepositions *предъ* and *со* (in a sense of reciprocity), or with the adverbs *блго, противъ* and *преко*; as: осень предшествуетъ зимѣ, *autumn precedes winter*; не прекословь старшимъ, *do not contradict the aged*.—3) After the verbs expressing command or prohibition, pleasure or grief, compliance or opposition, assistance or obstacle; e. g. мы подражаемъ древнимъ, *we imitate the ancients*; не льсти богатымъ, *do not flatter the rich*; служи усердно Государю, *serve the sovereign with zeal*. The verbal nouns formed from these verbs also require the dative; as: подражаніе древнимъ, *the imitation of the ancients*; лесть богатымъ, *flattery to the rich*.—4) After such verbs as are used in the infinitive instead of the future; as: быть бѣдѣ, *there will be a misfortune*; не видать намъ ясныхъ дней, *we shall see no more fine days*.—5) With the impersonal verbs; as: мнѣ хочется ѣсть, *I want to eat*; вамъ нездоровится, *you are indisposed*.—6) With such adjectives and adverbs as are derived from the above mentioned verbs, or which express advantage or detriment, utility or uselessness, pleasure or dislike; e. g. приятный слуху, *agreeable to the ear*; жить при-

лично своему состоянию, *to live suitably to one's condition*.—7) After the prepositions *кз* and *но*, and the adverb *вопреки* (§ 77).

The *instrumental* is used: 1) With the active, ^{Instru-}neuter, pronominal and passive verbs, ^{mental.} a) to designate the instrument, the means by which the action is performed; as: онъ берётъ книгу руками, *he takes the book with the hands*; я моюсь водою, *I wash myself with water*; книга написана моимъ учителемъ, *the book has been written by my master*; б) to designate the name, surname or quality given to an object; as: его зовутъ Иваномъ, *they call him John*; тебя почитаютъ умнымъ, *you are considered intelligent*. Some active verbs expressing motion, which usually govern the accusative, are also found with the instrumental; as: бросать камень and бросать камнемъ, *to throw a stone*; двигать сердца and двигать сердцами, *to move the hearts*.—2) With the verb *быть* and *быва́ть*, to designate a quality; as: онъ хочетъ быть любимымъ, *he desires to be loved*; не быва́ть тебѣ воиномъ, *thou wilt not be a warrior*. (See above the nominative).—3) After such verbs as indicate contempt, indignation, esteem, possession, sacrifice, &c.; as: пренебрега́ть опасностью, *to despise danger*; владе́ть имѣниемъ, *to possess a property*; жертвовать собою, *to sacrifice one's self*. The verbal nouns formed from such verbs also require the instrumental; as: пренебреже́ние опасностью, *the contempt of danger*; владе́ние имѣниемъ, *the possession of a property*.—4) To designate that part of an object which is distinguished by some particular quality; as: лице́мъ

white in the face; широкъ плечами, broad in the shoulders.—5) To indicate the road an object takes; and also to designate the seasons and the parts of the day; as: *плыть моремъ, to go by sea; весною сѣютъ, one sows in spring; ночью спятъ, one sleeps at night.*—6) After the prepositions *за, надъ, подъ, предъ, съ,* and the adverb *между* or *межъ* (§ 77).

Genitive The *genitive* is used: 1) With nouns to indicate that one object is the property of another, and also its origin, &c.; as: *хозяинъ дома, the master of the house; домъ сосѣда, the house of the neighbour; сынъ солдата, the son of a soldier.* The complementary noun in such occasions may be converted into a possessive adjective; as: *домовый хозяинъ, сосѣдний домъ, солдатскій сынъ.* The dative may sometimes be substituted for this genitive; as: *другъ брату, the friend of the brother; цѣна мѣстамъ, the price of the places.* A noun with a qualifying adjective indicates in the genitive the quality of the object in a higher degree; as: *чай лучшаго сорта, a tea of superior quality; человекъ строгихъ правилъ, a man of rigid principles.*—2) With the verbal nouns, formed from active verbs governing the accusative; e. g. *чтѣнiе книги, the reading of a book; знанiе дѣла, the knowledge of an affair.*—3) To designate number, weight, measure, and in general after adverbs of quantity; as: *пудъ сѣна, a pood of hay; аршинъ сукна, an ell of cloth; нѣсколько книгъ, some books.*—4) To designate the years, the months and the day of the month; as: *шестаго января тысяча восемьсотъ*

четырнадцатого года, *January 6th 1814.*—5) After active verbs preceded by the negative adverb *не*, and with the impersonal negative verbs *нѣтъ, не стало, не слышно, не имѣется*, and others indicating privation; e. g. *не люблю невѣжды, I do not like the ignorant; не вижу пользы, I do not see the advantage; у насъ нѣтъ хлѣба, we have no bread; когда меня не бѣдетъ, when I shall be no more; не видно переменъ, one sees no change.*—6) With the active verbs, when the action extends only to a part of the object, or lasts only a limited time; e. g. *принеси воды, bring me some water; дай мнѣ перо, give me your pen for a little while.* The same is the case with some verbs formed with the prepositions *на* and *по*, as: *наудить рыбы, to catch some fish; покосить травы, to mow some grass.*—7) With such active and pronominal verbs as express desire, expectation, disobedience, fear, privation, &c.; e. g. *желаемъ счастья, we desire health; онъ ждетъ разсвѣта, he awaits daybreak; бояться дневнаго свѣта, to fear the light of day; держаться правилъ чести, to keep to principles of honour.* The verbal nouns formed from these verbs also require the genitive; as: *желаніе славы, the desire of glory; лишеніе имѣнія, the loss of a property.*—8) After the adjectives *достойный, worthy; полный, full; чуждый, a stranger to;* and the adverb *жаль, it is a pity;* e. g. *я чуждъ сего мнѣнія, I am a stranger to this opinion; жаль ему брата, he is sorry for his brother.*—9) After adjectives and adverbs in the comparative, when not followed by a conjunction; e. g. *сокровища драгоценнѣйшія*

зѳлота, *treasures more precious than gold*; слонѳ выше верблюда, *the elephant is larger than the camel*; онѳ жилѳ долѳе всѳхѳ, *he has lived longer than all.*—10) After the prepositions безѳ, для, до, изѳ, изѳ-здѳ, изѳ-подѳ, отѳ, рѳди, съ and у, as also after most 'of the adverbs used as prepositions (§ 77), remarking that the prepositions для and рѳди are sometimes placed after their complement; as: для Бѳга and Бѳга для, *for God's sake*; рѳди чѳсти and чѳсти рѳди, *for honour*.

Lastly the *gentive* is used with the numerals. See the particular rules relative to the numerals § 43.

Preposi-
tional.

The *prepositional* case is only used with the prepositions въ, на, о or обѳ, no and при (§ 77).

EXERCISES ON THE DEPENDENCE OF WORDS.

- Nominative** Water is an element. Alexander of Macedon was a great captain. The Tatars were ferocious. My grand-father was an officer; my grand-father was then an officer. It is said that the comets have been or will be once planets.
- Вода быть стихія. Александрѳ Македонскій быть великій полководецъ. Татаринѳ быть свирѳпый. Мой дѳдѳ былѳ офицеръ; тогда . Говорить что комѳта быть или быть ещѳ планѳта.
- Accusative** The rain refreshes the earth. Rogues hate honest men. The storm which devastated our fields, has ruined many peasants. Speak always the truth. My brother has many peasants. Speak always the truth. My brother has many peasants. Speak always the truth. My brother has many peasants.
- Дождѳ освѳжать земля. Злодѳй ненавидѳть чѳстѳый люди. Бѳря, опустошѳть нашѳ полѳ, разорѳть многѳе посѳлянинѳ. Говорить всегда правда. Мой братѳ быть

been sick all winter. I have been a whole verst, on horseback.
 больной весь зима. Я ѣхать целый верста верхомъ.

Thou art praised for thy assiduity. He struck himself against
 Ты хвалить за прилежаніе. Онъ удариться объ
 the wall. We are in the water up to the neck. The son
 стѣна. Я сидѣть въ вода по шея. Сынъ

is the size of the father, and the daughter almost the size of
 ростъ съ отѣцъ, и дочь почти съ
 the mother.

мать.

The miser prefers money to glory, and the warrior Dauve.

Скупѣцъ предпочитать деньги слава, и воинъ

prefers glory to money. The lightning precedes the
 слава деньги. Молнія предшествовать

thunder. I admire your patience. Do these pictures
 громъ. Дивиться вашъ терпѣніе. Этотъ картина

please you? Do not avenge thyself on thy enemy,
 нравиться ли ты? Не мстить твой непріятель,

and do good to him who has offended thee. There will
 и дѣлать добро обижать ты. Быть

be a prodigy. Bitter tears will be shed. The child wishes
 чудо. Горькій слеза литься. Ребѣнокъ хотѣться

to drink. It is not proper for a strong man to offend
 пить. Не приличный сильный человекъ обижать

the weak. The imitation of Jesus Christ. The love of
 слабый. Подражаніе Иисусъ Христосъ. Любовь къ

virtue and the hatred of vice.
 добродѣтель и ненависть къ пороку.

I see with the eyes, I touch with the hands, I hear with Instru-
 Видѣть глазъ, осязать рука, слышать mental.

the ears, I smell with the nose, I taste with the tongue.
 ухо, обонать носъ, вкушать языкъ.

Ismail was taken by Souvorof, and Otchakow by Potemkin.
Измайль взятъ . Суворовъ, и Очаковъ Потёмкинъ.

Every body calls these officers heroes. The patient moves
Весь называть этотъ офицеръ герой. Больной шевелить
scarcely the lips. I detest fraud and falsehood. Here
едва губа. Гнушаться обманъ и ложь. Здѣсь

one breathes a pure air. The sacrifice of one's life for
дышать чистый воздухъ. Пожертвованіе жизнь за

his sovereign and country. He is kind in heart, but weak
Государь и отечество. Онъ добрый сердце, но слабый

in head. One must rise in the morning, work during
голова. Надожно вставать утро, работать

the day, rest in the evening and sleep during the night.
день, отдыхать вечеръ, и спать ночь.

Reconcile my friend with his uncle. I congratulate you on
Помирить мой другъ съ онъ дядя. Поздравлять ты съ

your success.

вашъ успѣхъ.

Genitive. The son of my faithful friend departed yesterday. Quick-
Сынъ мой искренній другъ уезжать вчера. Большой

attended children are often delicate. There has been made
умъ дитя бывать нередко хилый. Составлять

a list of the officers of our division. The baking of bread.
списокъ офицеръ нашъ дивизія. Печеніе хлебъ.

I have bought a pound of tea and a cord of wood. Such
Я купить фунтъ чай и сажень дрова. Столько

labour and pains have been lost uselessly. The Russians
трудъ и забота пропадать по-пустому. Русскій

took Paris March 18th 1814. I do not eat bread, but
брать Парижъ мартъ 18 1814. Я не есть хлебъ, но

I drink water. I eat the bread, but I do not drink the water.
пить вода. Я есть хлебъ, но не пить вода.

I have received neither letter nor packet. In this letter there
Я получа́ть не ни пи́сьмо, ни посылка. Въ э́тот пи́сьмо́ бы́ть

is not a fault. Procure me money. The warriors wish

ни оди́нь оши́бка. Достава́ть я де́ньги. Вои́нь жа́лать
for the battle and seek glory. The ambitious man thirsts for
бита́ и иска́ть сла́ва. Славолюбе́ць жа́ждать

honours. Thou desirest riches, and thou fearest labour.

по́честъ. Ты хо́теть бога́тство, и бо́иться тру́дъ.

The barrel is full of wine. A worthy man is a stranger to hatred

Бо́чка по́лний ви́но. До́брый че́ловѣкъ чу́ждый зло́ба

and envy. Gold is dearer than silver; lead is heavier

и за́висть. Зо́лото доро́гой серебро́; сви́нецъ тяжѣ́лый

than iron. He asks alms for Christ's sake. Rest is

жа́лзо. Онъ про́сить ми́лостыня Христо́съ ра́ди. О́тдыхъ

agreeable after labour. Along this shore runs a chain

прі́ятный по́слъ рабо́та. Вдо́ль э́тот бе́регъ тяну́ться це́пь

of mountains. The wolves prowl round the villages.

гора́. Волкъ броди́ть о́коло дере́вня.

My brother preserves his presence of mind in all the

Мой бра́тъ храни́ть прису́тствіе ду́хъ при ве́сь

Prepositional.

troubles of life. This town is built on the precipitous

непрі́ятность въ жи́знь. Сей го́родъ по́строить на круто́й

bank of a rapid river. A church with five cupolas. He

бе́регъ бы́стрый рѣ́ка. Це́рковь о́ пять гла́ва. Онъ

weeps over his father.

пла́кать по́ сво́й о́тець.

THE FAIRY.

Волше́бница.

The different rules of Syntax.

A widow had two daughters: the elder resembled

Оди́нь вдово́ имѣ́ть два до́чь: ста́рый бы́ть похо́жий на

her mother both in face and temper, that is to say, she was

сво́й ма́ть и ли́цѣ и нра́въ, то е́сть, онъ бы́ть

as ugly and as malicious as her mother. Nobody такъ же дурной и такъ же злой, какъ онъ мать. Никто loved them; every one avoided them. The younger was не любить онъ; весь бѣгать отъ онъ. Малый же быть beautiful and good. Every one loved her. But her прекрасный и добродушный. Весь любить онъ. Но онъ malicious mother and her wicked sister detested her; злый мать и злый сестра ненавидѣть онъ; they scolded her without ceasing; she alone was obliged бранить безпрестанно; онъ одинъ быть должный to work in the house, to heat the stove, to sweep the rooms, работать въ домъ, топить печь, мести горница, to cook. The poor child wept from morning till стряпать въ кухня. Бѣдняжка плакать съ утро до night, but she was not lazy at her work; she was вечеръ, но онъ не лѣниться работать; быть obedient, patient, and all that was in vain, for послушный, терпѣливый, и весь этотъ быть напрасный, ибо she could in no way satisfy her wicked mother and мочь не ничто угодать на свой злой мать . и на her wicked sister. свой злой сестра.

Every day this poor girl was forced to go with Ежедневно этотъ бѣдный дѣвушка быть должный ходить съ a large pitcher to fetch water in a neighbouring wood, большой кувшинъ за вода въ ближній роща, where there was a clear spring. One day she въ который находится чистый источникъ. Однажды онъ had gone according to custom to this spring. The day пойти по обыкновеніе къ этотъ источникъ. День was very hot. After having filled her pitcher with water, быть очень жаркій. Наполнить кувшинъ водѣ,

she returned home. All at once she saw before her
онъ возвращаться домой. Вдругъ видѣть предъ себя
an old woman. "My child!" said to her the old woman,
старушка. «Мой дитя!» скѣзывать онъ старушка,
"give me water to drink; I am wearied; I am very hot." —
«давать я напиваться; я уставать; я (быть) жаркій.» —
"With pleasure, good mother", said the young girl, "here
«Съ охота, бабушка», скѣзывать дѣвушка, «вотъ!
drink." And she presented the pitcher to the poor woman.
напиваться.» И онъ подавать кувшинъ старушка.

The old woman sat down on the grass from weariness, and
Старушка садиться на травѣ отъ слабость, а
the young girl kneeled down before her, and
молодой красавица становиться на колѣно передъ онъ, и

held gently the pitcher, while she drank.
поддѣрживать осторожно кувшинъ, пока онъ пить вода.

"I thank thee, my dear!" said the old woman after
«Благодарить ты, милый!» скѣзывать старушка,

having drunk. "I see that thou art a good, an amiable
напиваться. «Видѣть, что ты (есть) добрый, ласковый
child, and I wish to reward thee for thy kindness.
дитя, и хотѣть награждать ты за твой услужливость.

Know then that I am a fairy, and that I took pur-
Знать же, я волшебница, и взять на себя на-
posedly the form of an old woman to put thee to the proof.
рочно видѣ старушка, чтобы ты испытывать.

I am delighted that thou art so good, and this is what
Радоваться, что ты (есть) такой добрый, и вотъ, что

I will do for thee: every time that thou shalt pronounce
хотѣть сдѣлать для ты: всякій разъ, что ты скѣзывать

a word, there shall issue from thy mouth either a pretty
слово, выпадаѣ изъ у ты ротъ или прекрасный

flower, or a precious stone, or a large pearl.
цвѣтокъ, или драгоценный камень, или большой жемчужина.

Farewell, my little friend." And the fairy disappeared.
Прости, дружокъ.» И волшебница исчезать.

The pretty girl returned home. "Where hast
Прекрасный дѣвушка возвращаться домой. «Гдѣ
thou been so long", asked her mother with ill
ты быть такъ долго», спрашивать у онъ мать съ
humour? — "What hast thou been doing so long in the wood?"
сердце? — «Что ты дѣлать такъ долго въ роща?»,
cried her wicked sister. — "I beg pardon! I lingered by the
закричать злой сестра. — «Виноватый! замѣшкаться»,
way", replied the poor child, and at the same instant
отвѣчать бедняжка, и въ тотъ самый минута
there issued from her pretty lips two roses, two pearls,
скатываться изъ онъ прекрасный губа два роза, два жемчужина
and two large emeralds. "What do I see?" exclaimed
и два большой изумрудъ. «Что я видѣть?» восклицать
the mother astonished. "These are flowers! these are precious
мать удивленный. «Э тотъ цвѣтъ! этотъ драгоценный
stones! What has happened to thee?" — The young girl
камень! Что сдѣлаться съ ты?» — Красавица раз-
related to her with simplicity her meeting with the fairy,
сказывать онъ простоушно о свой встреча съ волшебница
and while doing it the flowers, diamonds and pearls
и между тотъ цвѣтъ, алмазъ и жемчугъ
issued just so from her lips. "Good!" muttered
сыпаться такъ съ онъ губа. «Хорошій же!» проворчать
the mother; "to-morrow I will send to the wood my elder
мать; «завтра посылать въ роща мой старый
daughter, and it will be the same with her."
дочь, и быть тотъ же съ онъ.»

And the next morning she said to her daughter:

И на друго́й у́тро онъ ска́зывать сво́й дочѣ:

“To-day thou shalt go to fetch water: take the pitcher; but
«Нынѣ ты пойти за вода́: взять кувши́нъ; но

pay attention, if thou meetest at the spring an old woman,
смотре́ть же, е́сли встрѣча́тъ у исто́чникъ стару́шка,

give her to drink, and be very civil to her.”
дава́тъ онъ напива́ться; и хороше́нко прила́скиваться къ онъ.»

The wicked girl frowned, took the pitcher with ill

Зло́й дѣвчо́нка нахму́риваться, взять кувши́нъ съ

humour; went to the wood against her will, and grumbled
доса́да; пойти́ въ ро́ща не́хотя, и ворча́тъ

all along the road. The good old woman was already
весь въ доро́га. Стару́шка сидѣ́тъ уже́

seated near the spring. “Draw me some water, my
у исто́чникъ. «Зачерпа́тъ я вода́, мой

dear!” said she to the young girl; “it is hot, I wish
ми́лый!» сказа́тъ онъ дѣвчо́нка; «(есть) жа́ркій, хоте́тъ

to drink.” — “What stuff! I am not come here
напива́ться.» — «Какъ бы не такъ! Я не при́йти сюда́ за то,

to serve old vagabonds; thou wilt have to drink
чтобы́ услу́живать ста́рый бродя́га напива́ться и

without me.” — “How rude thou art!” said the old
безъ я.» — «Како́й же гру́бый ты!» ска́зывать ста-

woman to her; “I will punish thee. From this moment with
ру́шка онъ; «я нака́зывать ты. Съ это́тъ порá при

each of thy words there shall issue from thy mouth either
ка́ждый тво́й сло́во выпада́тъ изъ у ты ро́тъ или́

a serpent or a frog.” She disappeared, and the wicked
зме́я или́ лягу́шка.» Онъ исче́заетъ, а зло́й

girl ran home after having broken her pitcher
дѣвчо́нка побѣ́жать домо́й разби́вать сво́й кувши́нъ

from spite. "What hast thou to tell me my dear daughter?"
 съ досада. «Что сказывать, мѣлый дочка?»

asked her mother, when she saw her at a distance. —
 спрашивать мать, видеть онъ издалека. —

"I have nothing to tell!" answered the daughter; and all
 «Нѣчто сказывать!» отвѣчать дочь; и

at once there issued from her mouth two vipers and two
 вдругъ выскакивать изъ онъ ротъ два змѣя и два

toads. "What do I see! what horror!" cried the mother;
 жаба. «Что я видѣть! какой страхъ!» закричать мать;

"but it is thy sister who is the cause of all that! I
 «но твой сестра (есть) виноватый въ весь этотъ! Я

will make her feel it." And they ran to beat the young girl.
 давать онъ знать.» И онъ бросаться бить меньшей дочь.

Frightened by their threats, she went to hide herself in
 Испугаться угроза, онъ скрываться въ

the wood, ran long without daring to look behind her,
 роща, бѣгать долго, не смѣть оглядываться,

fled very far and at last lost herself. But this
 забѣгать далеко, и наконецъ потерять дорожку. Но этотъ

was for her good. The son of the king, who was
 быть къ онъ счастье. Сынъ царскій, который

amusing himself at that time with hunting, was just
 забавляться тутъ охота, находится въ тотъ

then in the wood; he saw the young girl, who, seated
 время въ роща; увидѣть красавица, который, сидѣть

on the grass, was weeping bitterly. "What has happened to
 на трава, плакать горько. «Что сдѣлаться съ

thee? why dost thou weep, my dear?" asked he, taking
 ты? о что ты плакать, мѣлый?» спрашивать онъ, взять

her gently by the hand. — "Alas! how can I help
 онъ ласково за рука. — «Богъ мой! какъ я не

weeping! My mother has driven me out of the house." She
 плакать! Матушка выгонять я изъ домъ. Онъ
 spoke, and the flowers and the precious stones issued from
 говорить, а цвѣтъ и драгоценный камень сыпаться съ
 her rosy lips, and her tears were changed into pearls.
 розовый губа, и слеза обращаться въ жемчужина.

"What is the meaning of that?" asked the son of the king;
 «Что значить это?» спрашивать сынъ царскій;
 "whence come these flowers, these pearls and these stones?"
 «отъ что это цвѣтъ, жемчугъ и камень?»

The poor child related to the prince what had
 Бѣдняжка разсказывать царскій сынъ о томъ, что

happened to her. He became in love with her, and
 случаться съ онъ. Онъ полюбить онъ, и

he loved her more on account of her being so good and
 полюбить еще болѣе за то, что онъ быть такъ добрый и
 so pretty, than on account of her flowers and precious
 милый, нежели за онъ цвѣтъ и драгоценный

stones. He took her with him, presented her to the king
 камень. Онъ взять онъ съ себя, представлять онъ царь,

his father, whom she pleased also, and the king
 свой отецъ, который онъ понравиться также, и царь

permitted his son to marry her. Thus she became
 позволять сынъ жениться на онъ. Такой образъ онъ сдѣлаться

a princess, and on the death of the king, when her husband
 царевна, а по смерть царь, когда онъ мужъ

mounted the throne of his ancestors, she became queen,
 восходить на престолъ, отцовскій, царица,

and was a good queen. And her wicked sister, what
 и быть добрый царица. А онъ злой сестра, что

happened to her? She closed her life in a miserable
 сдѣлаться съ онъ? Онъ кончать свой жизнь жалостный

way. Her mother, whom she vexed and irritated incessantly, was forced to drive her from house: престанно, быть принужденный выгонять онъ изъ домъ; nobody would give her an asylum, and she went to hide никто не хотѣть давать онъ пристанище, и онъ скрывать- herself in the forest, where she died shortly after of vexation ся въ лѣсъ, гдѣ умирать скоро съ досада and hunger. и голюдъ.

CONSTRUCTION

84.—The grammatical order of the words in Russian is further removed from the natural construction, and inversions are more frequent than in English, French or even German; this however causes no obscurity, in as much as the inflections of the words sufficiently indicate their relative concord or dependence. With respect to the order of the propositions in the sentence, it is nearly the same in the four languages, as is seen in the following examples.

Если гѣній и дарованія ума If genius and talents merit имѣютъ право на благодар- the gratitude of the nations, ность народовъ, то Россія Russia owes a monument to должна Ломоносову монументъ. Lomonossof. *Karamzin.*

Побѣды, завоеванія и величїе The victories, the conquests государственное, возвысивъ and the grandeur of the empire, духъ народа Россійскаго, имѣли by elevating the intelligence счастливое дѣйствіе и на самый of the Russian nation, had a языкъ его, который, будучи happy influence even on the управленіемъ дарованіемъ и language, which, when em-

вкусомъ писателя умнаго, можетъ равняться нынѣ въ силѣ, красотѣ и пріятности съ лучшими языками древности и нашихъ временъ.

Карамзинъ.

Повелитель многихъ языковъ языкъ Россійскій не только обширностію мѣстъ, гдѣ онъ господствуетъ, но купно и собственнымъ своимъ пространствомъ и доволъствіемъ великъ передъ всѣми въ Европѣ. Карлъ V, Римскій Императоръ, говаривалъ, что Испанскимъ языкомъ съ Богомъ, Французскимъ съ друзьями, Нѣмецкимъ съ непріятелями, Италійскимъ съ жѣнскимъ поломъ говорить прилично. Но если бы онъ Россійскому языку былъ искусенъ, то конечно къ тому присовокупилъ бы, что имъ со всѣми оными говорить пристойно. Ибо нашѣлъ бы въ немъ великолѣпіе Испанскаго, живость Французскаго, крепость Нѣмецкаго, нѣжность Италійскаго, сверхъ того богатство и сильную въ изображеніяхъ краткость Греческаго и Латінскаго языка.

Ломоносовъ.

played by the talent and the taste of man of genius, can now rival in strength, beauty and delicacy the noblest tongues of ancient and modern times.

Карамзинъ.

The Russian language, the parent of many others, is superior to all the languages of Europe not only by the extent of the countries where it is dominant, but also by its own comprehensiveness and richness. Charles the Fifth, Emperor of the Romans, said that one ought to speak Spanish to the Divinity, French to one's friends, German to one's enemies and Italian to ladies. But had he been acquainted with Russian, he would assuredly have added that one could speak it with each and all. He would have discovered in it the majesty of the Spanish, the vivacity of the French, the strength of the German, the sweetness of the Italian, and in addition energetic conciseness in its imagery with the richness of the Greek and Latin.

Lomonosoff.

THIRD PART

—

ORTHOGRAPHY.

USE OF THE LETTERS.

- 85.—We have already seen (§ 7—10) that several letters lose their own peculiar sound, taking that of the letter with which they have the closest affinity, and that certain other letters are silent, disappearing entirely in the pronunciation. In such cases the object of *Orthography* is to indicate the letter which has lost its own peculiar sound and taken an accidental one; and, to do that, recourse must be often had to etymology, in order to discover a derivative and give it, by the help of the grammatical forms, such an inflection as may serve to show the form of the doubtful letter.

Vowels. 86.—Several vowels are often confounded in writing, on account of the close affinity or perfect identity of their pronunciation. As this confusion arises almost invariably from the absence of the tonic accent, it is necessary, in order to discover the form of the letter, to find a derivative or an inflection of the word where the doubtful vowel is accented. Thus:

we write	я́йцо (and not яи́цо), a <i>postilion</i> , (and not яй́цо), an <i>egg</i> (and not я́чмень), <i>barley</i> . . . (and not мену́), I <i>draw</i> (and not ве́жу), I <i>bind</i>	because we say	я́мъ (<i>primitive word</i>), a <i>relay</i> . я́йца (<i>nom. plur.</i>), <i>eggs</i> . я́чный (<i>derivative</i>), of <i>barley</i> . та́нутъ (3d pers. pl.), they <i>draw</i> . вя́жешь (2d pers. sing.), thou <i>bindest</i>
	жа́лю (and not желю́), I <i>pity</i> . . . шу́лу (and not желу́), a <i>rogue</i> . (and not че́сы), a <i>watch</i> (and not шеду́тъ), to <i>spare</i> . моли́тва (and not мали́тва), a <i>prayer</i> . вдова́ (and not едова́), the <i>widow</i> . . говори́тъ (and not аговари́тъ), to <i>speak</i> .		жа́ль (<i>primitive</i>), <i>pity</i> . шу́лость (<i>derivative</i>), <i>rogueery</i> . ча́сть (<i>primitive</i>), the <i>hour</i> . поща́да (<i>derivative</i>), <i>pardon</i> . онъ мо́литъ (3d pers. sing.), he <i>prays</i> . вдовы́ (<i>nom. plur.</i>), the <i>widows</i> говори́тъ, <i>speaking</i> , & разгово́ръ, <i>discourse</i> .

Е. Ъ. — The two vowels most commonly confounded are *e* and *ъ*. In order to know which of them ought to be used, recourse must be had to the dictionary. We may however observe that the letter *ъ* is never used in words taken from foreign languages; as: каде́тъ, a *cadet*; слёса́рь, a *locksmith* (*Germ. Schloßer*); пе́ня, *fine* (*Lat. pœna*), excepting in Ва́на, *Vienna*, which is properly speaking a Slavonic word. Sometimes the vowel *и* (or *ѣ*) is changed in the derivatives into *ъ*; as: бесе́да, *conversation*; де́ти, *children*; Алекса́й, *Alexis*; Серге́й, *Sergius*; Апри́ль, *April* (from сидѣ́тъ, to be seated; дитя́, *child*; Алекси́й, Серге́й, Априли́й). In the words ле́карь, a *physician*; ле́карство, a *medicine*; лѣчи́тъ, to *heal*, &c.; which some persons write ле́карь, лека́рство, лечи́тъ, the Dictionary of the Russian Academy preserves the letter *ъ*. These vowels may in some occasions be distinguished. As the vowel *e* is in certain cases pronounced *io* or *o*, and the vowel *ъ* has this sound only in some words (§ 8), it is necessary to look for an inflection or a word in which the doubtful vowel is accented. Thus:

	(and not о́льза), the <i>tear</i>	
we write	е́ль (and not я́ль), the <i>fir</i>	on account of
	берёзникъ (and not берѣзники), a <i>birch kopse</i> . ле́дникъ (and not лѣдники), an <i>ice-house</i> . .	
	утверди́тъ (and not утѣврдитъ), to <i>affirm</i> . у́гнетеле (and not уѣмѣнѣле), <i>persecution</i> .	

Е. Э. — The vowel *э* is used at the beginning of the Russian words э́й, *ho!* э́хъ, *hey!* э́тотъ, *this*; э́кой and э́такой, *oh what!* also at the beginning of foreign words and after a vowel; e. g. эква́торъ, the *equator*; э́йръ, *ether*; поэ́ма, a *poem*;

поѣтъ, *a poet*. After *i* we can in this case employ the vowel *e*, as in піеца, *a piece*. Such words as had been incorporated into the Russian language before the vowel *э* was in use, are written with *e*; as: евангеліе, *the gospel*; епископъ, *a bishop*; епархія, *a diocese*; еunuхъ, *an eunuch*; Европа, *Europe*, and some others. 'The vowel *e* is further used for the Latin or German letters *je*, *gi* and *ge*; as прое́ктъ, *a project*; реѣ́стръ, *a register*; еде́сь, *the sword-hilt*, еоре́йторъ, *a corporal* (*Lat. pro-jectum, register; Germ. Gefäß, Gefreiter*).

И. I. — The vowel *i* is used, instead of *u*, before all the vowels and before the semi-vowel *й*; as: сі́ё, *that*; приу́чать, *to accustom*; при́ятный, *agreeable*; ге́ній, *genius*, as also in the word мі́ръ, *the world*, and its derivatives: мі́рско́й, *worldly*; во́семі́рный, *universal*; Вла́димі́ръ, *Vladimir*, to be distinguished from мі́ръ, *peace*, and its derivatives; as: ми́рный, *peaceful*; ми́рять, *to reconcile*; сми́рный, *calm*. In words formed from the numerals, as: пяти-аршинный, *of five yards*; семи-уго́льный, *heptagon*, &c., the letter *u* is retained, but a hyphen must be placed between the two parts of the word. In the word му́ро, *the holy oil*, and its derivatives: му́ропома́заніе, *unction*; му́роно́сица, *bearer of aromatics*; му́ропома́занникъ, *the Lord's anointed*, the Slavonic letter ѿюуца has been retained.

И. Ы. — The vowel *ы* is formed by the union of *э* and *u*; in compound words however it is necessary to retain the form of these two letters, and write, for instance: предше́дущій, *preceding*; безы́мянный, *anonymus*, &c. It is only in the words compounded of и́скать, *to seek*, and иѓрать, *to play*, that the letters *э* and *u* are joined and form *ы*; e. g. сы́щикъ, *an emissary*; ро́зыскъ, *the inquiry*; сыѓраться, *to play quits*; разы́грать, *to raffle for* (instead of сы́ищикъ, ро́зыискъ, сыиѓраться, разыиѓрать). — In foreign words after *ц* the vowel *u* is employed, although pronounced *ы*; thus we write меди́цина, *medicine*; цѣркуль, *compasses*; цѣ́фра (which some persons write цѣ́ора), *a cipher*; excepting цы́ганъ, *a gypsy*, and цы́фиръ, *ciphers*. — In the adjectives it is necessary to distinguish the terminations *ы́й* and *и́й*, as: по́стный, *of Lent*; лѣ́тний, *of summer*, and its compounds: со́вершеннолѣ́тний, *of full age*; сто́лѣтний, *centenary*; &c.; the word ма́лолѣ́тний, *young* is an exception.

87.—The semi-vowels (ъ, ь, ѣ), the two first of which are placed after consonants, and the last after vowels, are vowels only half uttered (§ 9), *ъ* being half of the vowel *o*, *ь* half of the vowel *u*. Semi-vowels.

The semi-vowel *ъ* at the end of words may be used after all the consonants, while the semi-vowel *ь* cannot be placed either after the gutturals (г, к, х) or the lingual (ц). The hard or liquid sound of these two letters, which is generally perceived after consonants, as: *братъ, the brother*, and *брать, to take*; *пыль, flame*, and *пыль, dust*; *станъ, the stature*, and *станъ, become*, is not distinguished after the hissing letters (ж, ч, ш, щ), as in the words: *ножь, a knife*, and *ложь, a lie*; *мечъ, a sword*, and *сечь, to cut*; *камышъ, the reed*, and *мышь, a mouse*; *тошъ, fasting*, and *ношъ, the night*.

In the middle of a word the semi-vowel *ь* is placed after all the consonants, excepting г, к, х, ц; e. g. *судьба, destiny*; *весьма, very*; *обезьяна, a monkey*; *деньги, money*; *письмо, a letter*; *польза, utility*; *сельдь, a herring*; *тюрьма, the prison*, &c. The semi-vowel *ъ*, in words formed with a preposition, is only retained before the vowels, *е, и, ю, я*; as: *отъѣмлю, I take away*; *предъидущій, preceding*; *въѣхать, to enter*; *объюродѣть, to become a fool*; *объявить, to announce*. The same is the case with the Latin prepositions *ad* and *ob*, as in the words *адъютантъ, an adjutant*; *объективный, objective*.

The semi-vowels *ь* and *ѣ* are sufficiently distinct; the former (*ь*) can only be used after a consonant, the latter (*ѣ*) only after a vowel, as we have already seen, § 9.

88.—The feeble consonants (б, в, г, д, ж, з), Consonants. which, at the end and in the middle of a word before a strong letter, are articulated like their corresponding strong consonants (п, ф, к or х, т, ш, ц, § 10), may be distinguished from the latter by an inflection of the words. Thus:

we write:	{	бобъ, <i>a bean</i> , and цѣпъ, <i>a snail</i> ,	{	бобѣ and цѣпѣ.
		ловъ, <i>capture</i> , and граѣъ, <i>a count</i> ,		ловѣ and граѣѣ.
		кругъ, <i>a circle</i> , and крюкъ, <i>a hook</i> ,		кругѣ and крюкѣ.
		Богъ, <i>God</i> , and духъ, <i>spirit</i> ,		Богѣ and духѣ.
		кладъ, <i>treasure</i> , and братъ, <i>brother</i> ,		кладѣ and братѣ.
		ножъ, <i>a knife</i> , and ковшъ, <i>a scoop</i> ,		ножѣ and ковшѣ.
		гузъ, <i>the ace</i> , and усъ, <i>the mustache</i> ,		гузѣ and усѣ.
		трубка, <i>a pipe</i> , and шанка, <i>a sap</i> ,		трубокѣ and шанокѣ.
	{	лавка, <i>a bench</i> , and фѣйка, <i>a blow-pipe</i> ,	{	лавокѣ and фѣйокѣ.
		бѣлка, <i>sentry-box</i> , and ѣтка, <i>a duck</i> ,		бѣлокѣ and ѣтокѣ.
		крѣжка, <i>a goblet</i> , and мѣшка, <i>little fly</i> ,		крѣжекѣ and мѣше.
		сказка, <i>a tale</i> , and плѣска, <i>a dance</i> ,		сказокѣ and плѣсо.

In cases where the change of inflection fails to indicate the doubtful letter, recourse must be had to etymology to discover the root from which the derivative word is formed. Thus:

we write:	{	просьба, <i>a prayer</i> (and not <i>прѡсьба</i>), . . .	{	просить, <i>to pray</i> , from the root <i>про</i>
		женѣтъба, <i>marriage</i> (and not <i>женѣдѣба</i>), . .		женѣтъ, <i>to marry</i> (in <i>Sl. женѣтъба</i>)
		бѣдочникъ, <i>a sentry</i> (and not <i>бѣточникъ</i>), .		бѣдка, <i>sentry-box</i> , <i>gen. pl.</i> бѣдокѣ.
		присѣтъе, <i>presence</i> (and not <i>присѣдѣе</i>), . .		сѣтъ, <i>3d pers. pl.</i> of <i>есѣ</i> , <i>I am</i> .
		жжѣнный, <i>burnt</i> (and not <i>сжѣнный</i>), . . .		жжѣшь, <i>2d pers. sing.</i> of <i>жгѣ</i> , <i>I burn</i> .
		рѣбчикъ, <i>a hazel-hen</i> (and not <i>рѣчикъ</i>), . .		рябѣй, <i>with variegated feathers</i> .
		грѣчевый, <i>of buck-wheat</i> (and not <i>грѣшечный</i>), .		грѣча, <i>buck-wheat</i> , <i>ч</i> being immutab
		свѣчникъ, <i>a candlestick</i> (and not <i>свѣшникъ</i>), .		свѣча, <i>a candle</i> , from <i>свѣтъ</i> , <i>light</i>
		гудѣчикъ, <i>violinist</i> (and not <i>гудѣшникъ</i>), . .		гудѣкъ, <i>violin</i> , <i>ж</i> and <i>к</i> change into
		вѣдѣшникъ, <i>rag-gatherer</i> (and not <i>свѣдѣшникъ</i>), .		вѣдѣшъ, <i>a rag</i> , from <i>вѣдѣхъ</i> , <i>old</i> .

наѣшникъ, *slanderver* (and not *наѣшникъ*), .
 Волѣшскій, *Walachian* (and not *волѣшскій*), .
 Волѣжскій, *of the Volga* (and not *волѣжскій*), .

ѣхо, *the ear*, *ж* changes into *ш*.
 Волѣхъ, *a Walachian*, *ж* ch. into *ш*.
 Волѣга, *the Volga*, *ж* changes into *ш*.

The present orthography of the word порѣчникъ, *a lieutenant* (from порѣчить, *to commit*, from рукѣ, *the hand*), is not in conformity with its etymology; for the termination being чикъ (as in потѣчикъ, *an indulger*, from потѣкать, *to connive*, from такъ, *thus*), it ought to be written порѣтчикъ, as some persons still write it. Another exception is свѣдѣба, *wedding* (formerly свѣдѣба), from свѣдѣть, *to ask in marriage*.

The word столѣ, *a column*, is written in Slavonic with *ѣ* n, as also its derivatives: столѣникъ, *the stylic*; столѣтворѣне, *the building of the tower of Babel*; but in Russian it is written with a б, столѣбъ, a consonant which is retained in the words столѣбой, *columnar*; столѣбчакъ, *basalt*; столѣбнякъ, *tetanus*; столѣбенѣть, *to be stupefied*.

З. — The feeble consonant *з* of the preposition *въ* or *воз*, из, низ, раз or *роз*, is changed, in derivatives, before the strong consonants *к, ш, т, х*, into its corresponding strong consonant *с*; thus we write: *вспомнить*, to remember; *воспитаніе*, education; *исключить*, to exclude; *нисходить*, to descend; *расторгнуть*, to tear up; *ропись*, a catalogue (instead of *взпомнить*, *возпитаніе*, *изключить*, *низходить*, *разторгнуть*, *ропись*). Before the strong consonants *с, ц, ч, ш* and *щ*, the letter *з* keeps its form, as in *изстари*, formerly; *разцвѣстї*, to open; *изчезнуть*, to disappear; *возшествіе*, accession; *разщѣпъ*, a slit. The prepositions *безъ* and *чрезъ* in this case remain unchanged; thus we write: *безподобный*, incomparable; *чрезчуръ*, excessively (and not *бесподобный*, *чресчуръ*). It is the same with the preposition *съ*, which retains its form before a feeble consonant, although it then takes the pronunciation of *з*; thus we should write: *сбавить*, to diminish; *сдѣлать*, to make; *сгонять*, to drive off; *сжимать*, to compress (and not *збавить*, *здѣлать*, *згонять*, *зжимать*).

Ц. — The compound consonant *ц* cannot be used instead of *тс* or *дс*, when *т* and *д* are radical letters, and *с* belongs to the termination of the word; thus we write: *плотскій*, carnal, from *плоть*, the flesh; *персидскій*, Persian, from the Latin *Persis*, *sidis* (and not *плѣцскій*, *персѣцскій*); but we write: *нѣмецкій*, German, from *Нѣмецъ*, a German; *казацкій*, Cossack's, from *казакъ*, a Cossack. In the numerals we write *дц*, as: *одиннадцать*, eleven; *двадцать*, twenty, words contracted from the Slavonic *одѣнь-на-десять*, *двѣ-десять*.

Щ. — The compound consonant *щ*, in the derivatives, is the commutation of *ск* and *ст*, or else it supplies the place of the consonants *зч, жч, сч*, as: *вощать*, to wax, from *воскъ*, wax; *умащать*, to anoint, from *масть*, balm; *прикащикъ*, a clerk, from *приказъ*, an order; *рыщикъ*, a cutter, from *рѣзать*, to cut. But the form of the radical letters is retained in the words *счастье*, happiness; *считать*, to count; *счётъ*, *разсчётъ*, an account; *мужчина*, a man, which must not be written *щастіе*, *щитать*, *щѣтъ*, *разщѣтъ*, though we also write *мущина*.

Ф. Θ. — The consonants *ф* and *θ* are used, the former for Russian words, and such Greek and other words as are

written with *φ*, *ς* or *ρ*, and the latter for Greek words written with *θ* or *τ*; thus we write: *судакъ*, a *jackel*; *семья*, a *family*; *физика*, *physics*; *Филиппъ*, *Philip*; *Фотій*, *Photius*; and *рѣмѣ*, *rhymē*; *рѣма*, *rhyme*; *мифологія*, *mythology*; *Теодоръ*, *Theodore*; *Томъ*, *Thomas*.

Doubling of
consonants

89.—The consonants are doubled in Russian in the following cases: 1) In the words in *никъ*, *ство*, *ный*, *нй* and *скій*, the radical of which terminates in *н* or *с*; e. g. *плѣнникъ*, a *prisoner*, from *плѣнь*, *captivity*; *искусство*, *art*, from *искусъ*, an *essay*; *истинный*, *true*, from *истина*, the *truth*; *осенний*, *autumnal*, from *осень*, *autumn*; *Русскій*, *Russian*, from *Русь*, *Russia*. The same takes place in adjectives in *енный*, and passive participles in *анный*, *янный*, *енный*, *ынный*, e. g. *искусственный*, *artificial*; *дѣланный*, *made*; *заслуженный*, *merited*. These participles must not be confounded with the qualifying and possessive adjectives; as: *учёный*, *learned*; *заслужёный*, *emerited*; *кожаный*, *of skin*; *серебряный*, *of silver*, which are written with a single *н*.—2) In such words as are formed with a preposition, where the initial consonant of the primitive is the same as the final consonant of the preposition; e. g. *беззубый*, *toothless*; *вводить*, *to introduce*; *поданный*, *subject*; *ссылка*, *exile*.—3) In the preterit of the pronominal verbs, when the verb ends in the consonant *с*; as: *разнёсся*, *it has spread itself*; *спасся*, *he has saved himself*.—4) When by the change of a commutable letter two consonants come together, as in the verb *жгу*, *I burn*, which, by the change of *г* into *ж*, is in the second person *жжёшь*, and in the passive participle *жжённый*; and in *вожжа*, a *rein*; *вожжать*, *to bridle*,

from *водить*, to lead, by the change of *ѡ* into *ж*.—

5) Lastly consonants are doubled in some foreign words; e. g. *аббатъ*, an *abbot*; *суббота*, *Saturday*; *акула*, a *shark*; *классъ*, a *class*; *коLOSSъ*, a *colossus*; *коллѣгія*, a *college*; *металлъ*, a *metall*, &c.

90.—The *capital* letters (прописныя буквы) are employed, generally speaking, in Russian as in English. Thus a capital letter is placed at the beginning of every sentence, of every line of poetry, of all the proper names of men, places, nations, rivers, mountains and winds, as also of all those of a science, an art or a profession, if taken in an individual sense which distinguishes the particular science, art or profession from every other. All titles and ranks joined to a proper name must also be distinguished by an initial capital, and the same is the case with the appellative names of tribunals, companies and corporate bodies.

DIVISION OF WORDS INTO SYLLABLES.

91.—The division of words into syllables, when one part has to be carried on from one line to another, is marked by the hyphen, and is performed according to the following rules which are based on the etymology of the words:

1. Monosyllables, as: *страсть*, *passion*; *здравъ*, in *health*; *чувствъ*, of the *senses* (*gen. pl.*), cannot be divided.

2. Prepositions and every other affix, whether initial or final, may be separated from the rest of the

word; e. g. от-ра́да, *mitigation*; о-тра́ва, *poison*; без-конéч-ный, *infinite*; востóкъ, *the East*; мед-вѣдь, *a bear*; раз-умъ, *reason*; свóйство, *property*; ям-щикъ, *a postilion*; зéм-скій, *terrestrial*; дру́жба, *friendship*; Царь-гра́дъ, *Constantinople*, &c.

3. The compound consonants жд, ст, as also кс, кз, нс and дж in foreign words, cannot be divided; e. g. ме́-жду, *between*; три́-ста, *three hundred*; Але-ксáндръ, *Alexander*; э-кзáмень, *examination*; кле-псидра, *a clepsydra*; Рóджеръ, *Roger*.

4. The final vowels, as: свóя, *his*; крутóе, *steep*; as well as the terminations of the verbs, as: пою́тъ, *they sing*; стрóятъ, *they build*; жалѣ́етъ, *he regrets*, cannot be separated from the rest of the word.

ORTHOGRAPHY OF ISOLATED WORDS.

Russian
words

92.—Every Russian word is written as a single word, if by the loss of one of its component parts the sense would be changed; e. g. соучáстникъ, *an accomplice*; избранный, *elected*; отчѣтъ, *an account*; прибыль, *a gain*; морехóдъ, *the navigation*; водопровóдъ, *an aqueduct*, &c. On this subject the following rules must be observed:

1) The prepositions which are employed both conjointly and separately (§ 76), are written conjointly: а) Before the verbs and words derived from them; e. g. прино́сить, *to bring*; прино́съ, *a gift*; прино́шеніе, *the offering*; прино́ситель, *a bearer*, &c. б) Before such other parts of speech as are not used without the preposition; as: на́выкъ, *the habit*; извѣ́стный, *known*; ве́тарь, *anciently*;

на́взничь, *backwards*; о́земь, *on the ground*. c) Before nouns, adjectives, pronouns and adverbs as form with the preposition an adverb or a conjunction; e. g. встарину́, *formerly*; извне́, *from without*; сначала, *in the first place*; вслѣдъ, *in the footsteps*; потому́, *hence*. If the noun from which the adverb is formed, is determined by another word, the preposition is written separately; e. g. съ нача́ла вѣка, *at the beginning of the century*; по тому́ случаю, *on this occasion*. The adverbs во-пе́рвыхъ, *firstly*, во-вторы́хъ, *secondly*; по-ру́сски, *in Russian*; по-солда́тски, *like soldiers*, and others similar, as also the compound prepositions изъ-за́, *from behind*, and изъ-по́дъ, *from under*, are written with the hyphen (§ 94, 2).

2. The prefix particle *нѣ* is always written conjointly with the pronoun or the adverb following; as: нѣ́ето, *some one*; нѣ́которые, *some*; нѣ́когда, *once*.

3. The particle *ни* is written conjointly in the words ни́кто, *nobody*; ни́что, *nothing*; ни́гдѣ, ни́куда, *nowhere*; ни́когда́, *never*; ни́какѣ́, *not at all*, and separately in all other words; as: ни́ кото́рый, *none*; ни́ зерна́, *not a grain*.

4) The negative *не* is written separately before verbs and the circumstantial adverbs; as: не́ смѣ́ю, *I dare not*; не́ здѣ́сь, *not here*, with the exception of verbs whose proper meaning is changed by the negative *не*, or which are not used without the negative; as: недостава́ть, *to be wanting*; ненави́дѣть, *to hate*; недо́вѣ́рять, *to distrust*. It is written conjointly with nouns, qualifying adjectives and adverbs, when the negation refers to the object

or to the quality, and not to the verb; e. g. *неравенство нравовъ* бываетъ причиною споровъ, *dissimilarity of character is the cause of the quarrels*; *несносная скука* убиваетъ меня, *an unbearable ennui is killing me*; *я гуляю* неохотно, *I walk against my will*; and also when the noun has no meaning without the negation; e. g. *нѣтопырь*, *a bat*; *негодяй*, *a good-for-nothing*; *нѣдугъ*, *a disease*. With the participles the negative *не* is written conjointly when, like the adjectives, they serve to determine the nouns; and separately when, like the verbs, they have a complement; e. g. *незнающій* человекъ, *an ignorant man*; человекъ, *не знающій* своихъ обязанностей, *the man who is ignorant of his duties*.

5. The particle *бы* or *бъ* is written conjointly only in the conjunctions *чтобы* (or *чтобъ*) and *дабы*, *that*; everywhere else it is written separately. It is necessary to distinguish the conjunction from the pronoun *что* with *бы*; e. g. *чтобы* онъ далъ тебѣ эту книгу, *I wish him to give you this book*; *что бы* далъ я за эту книгу, *what would I have given for this book*! In the latter case *бы* is written separately.

6. The conjunction *уже* or *ужъ* is conjointly written in the words *уже́* or *ужъ*, *already*; *да́же*, *even*; *ни́же*, *not even*, and separately in the other words; as: *или́ же*, *or even*; *одна́ко же*, *however*; *то́тъ же*, *the same*. It is also written conjointly in the copulative conjunction *та́кже*, and the adverb *то́же*, *too*; but it is written separately in the comparative conjunction *та́къ же*, *as well*, and in the pronoun *то*

же, *the same*; е. g. онъ такъ же хорошо пишетъ, какъ читаетъ, *he writes as well as he reads*: онъ такъ же дворянинъ, *he is also gentleman*; я боленъ и онъ тоже, *I am sick and he too*; я говорю то же, что и вы, *I say the same thing as you*.

93.—Foreign words are written with those letters Foreign words. of the Russian alphabet, which give as closely as possible the pronunciation of these words in the language from which they are borrowed: the rule is the base of the orthography of foreign words. Such are for instance the words: епархія, *a diocese*; кѣѣдра, *the pulpit* (*Gr. ἐπαρχία, κέδρα*); сенаторъ, *a senator*; корона, *a crown* (*Lat. senator, corona*); ѱжю, *the agio*; карета, *a carriage* (*Ital. agio, carreta*); футъ, *a foot*; сплинъ, *the spleen* (from the *English*); актёръ, *an actor*; медаль, *a medal* (*Fr. acteur, médaille*); брѣстверь, *the parapet*; кѣчеръ, *a coachman* (*Germ. Brustwehr, Kutscher*); ватерпасъ, *a level*; фарватеръ, *the channel* (*Dutch: waterpas, vaarwater*); вѣнзель, *a cipher*; трактёръ, *an eating-house keeper* (*Pol. wezel, traktyer*). Some of these words in passing into the Russian language have taken terminations peculiar to it, while others have undergone an alteration both in their pronunciation and orthography; such are: фитиль, *a match*; фонарь, *a lanthorn* (*mod. Gr. φωτίλι, φανάριον*); алтарь, *an altar*; мраморъ, *marble* (*Lat. altare, marmor*); ѱхта, *a yacht*; мѣчманъ, *a midshipman* (from the *English*); шпѣга, *a sword* (*Ital. spada*); салфѣтка, *a napkin*; табакѣрка, *a snuff-box* (*Fr. serviette, tabatière*); биржа, *the exchange*; тарѣлка, *a plate*, (*Germ. Börse, Teller*); шкѣперъ,

master of a merchantship; шлюзъ, *a sluice* (*Dutch: schipper, sluis*), &c.

The same thing takes place in the Greek and Latin proper names;* as: Алексáндръ, *Alexander*; Николáй, *Nicholas*; Филипъ, *Philip*; Пáвель, *Paul*; Елéна, *Helen*; А́вгустъ, *Augustus*; Ю́лий, *Julius*; Натáлия, *Nataly*. Some follow the pronounciation of both Greek and Latin; as: Омíръ and Гомéръ, *Homer*; Алкивиáдъ and Алкибиáдъ, *Alcibiades*; Фивъ and Фебъ, *Phæbus*; Би́отия and Бе́отия, *Beotia*. Others are formed from the Greek or Latin genitive; as: Биáнтъ, *Bias*; Цицерóнъ, *Cicero*; Артеми́да, *Artemis*; Илиáда, *the Iliad*; Венéра, *Venus*; Церéра, *Ceres*.*

The proper names of lands, countries, rivers, towns and other names of modern geography, some retain their Latin denomination; as: Гермáния, *Germany*; А́встрія, *Austria*; Сици́лія, *Sicily*; Неáполь, *Naples*; Флорéнція, *Florence*; Везúвий, *Vesuvius*, &c. Others are written as they are pronounced in the language to which they belong; as: Лондо́нъ, *London*; Чéльси, *Chelsea*; Гриничъ, *Greenwich*; Мю́нхенъ, *Munich*; Майнцъ, *Mayence*; Брю́с-сель, *Brussels*; Ма́асъ, *the Meuse*; Шéльда, *the Scheldt*; Рей́нъ, *the Rhine*; Кордо́ва, *Cordova*; Хе́ресъ, *Xeres*; Бадахóсъ, *Badajoz*; Схевени́нгенъ, *Schevening*; Кéльнъ, *Cologne*; Рéгенсбургъ, *Ratisbon*; Лйттихъ, *Liege*; А́хенъ, *Aix-la-Chapelle*; Карлсру́э, *Carlsruhe*; Пиачéнца, *Piacenza*; Ливóрно, *Leghorn*; Бордо́, *Bordeaux*; Марсéль, *Marseille*; Лоáра, *the Loire*, &c. Some of these names have passed into the Russian through another language; such

are: Пари́жъ, *Paris* (from the Italian *Parigi*); Римъ, *Rome* (from the Polish *Rzym*); Копенга́генъ, *Copenhagen* (from the German *Kopenhagen*, instead of the Danish *Kiøbenhavn*). Some German names of countries and towns inhabited by Slavonian tribes have been replaced by Slavonic names; as: Вѣна, *Vienna*; Бресла́вль, *Breslau*; Тору́нь, *Thorn*; Львовъ, *Lemberg*; Венгрія, *Hungary*, and some others.

The proper names of historical persons and others in modern languages are written in Russian according to the pronunciation of the language to which they belong; such are the English names: Шэкспиръ, *Shakespeare*; Бейронъ, *Byron*; Юмъ, *Hume*; Джонсонъ, *Johnson*; Ньютонъ, *Newton*; the French names: Ришельё, *Richelieu*; Даву, *Davoust*; Руссо, *Rousscau*; Ролленъ, *Rollin*; Делиль, *Delille*; the German names: Блюхеръ, *Blücher*; Виландъ, *Wieland*; Гёте, *Gæthe*; Гайднъ, *Haydn*; the Italian names: Херубини, *Cherubini*; Чимароза, *Cimarosa*; the Polish names: Чарторы́скій, *Czartoryski*; Потóцкая, *Potocka*; Нѣмцевичъ, *Niemcewicz*, &c.

We may here remark that the proper names of the Russian language, the alphabet of which differs from that of the other European tongues, ought to be written in each foreign language in such a manner as to give as closely as possible the Russian pronunciation. Thus the Russian proper names: Кара́мзинъ, Пу́шкинъ, Держави́нъ, Шишкóвъ, Жуко́вскій, Меще́рскій, Чи́теринъ, Каза́нь, Вязьма, Рже́въ, Житоми́ръ, are written in English: *Karamsin, Pushkin, Derzhavin, Shishkof, Zhukovski, Mestcherski, Tchitcherin, Kaman, Viasma, Rsef, Zhitomir*, in French: *Karamzine, Pouchekine, Derjavine, Chichkof, Joukovski, Mestcherski, Tchitchérine, Kaman, Viasma, Rsef, Jitomir*; in German: *Karamsin, Puschkint, Derzhawin, Schischlow, Schukowski, Meischtscheraki, Tschitcherine, Kaman, Wiasma or Bafma, Rsew, Schitomit*, and

the same in other languages. Exceptions will be found to this rule in certain proper names which have been adopted long ago; as: Москва́, Санктпетербур́гъ, Варшава́, Мита́ва, and some others; in English: *Moscow, Saint-Petersburg, Warsaw, Mittau*; in French: *Moscou, Saint-Petersbourg, Varsovie, Mittau*; in German: *Moskau, St. Petersburg, Warschau, Mitau*. See the particular Vocabularies of the *Parallel Dictionaries of the Russian, French, German and English languages*.

ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS.

94.—The *orthographic signs* (знаки правописа́нія) of the Russian language are: the *accent* (ударе́ние), the *hyphen* (едини́тельный знакъ or черто́чка), the *sign of brevity* (кра́ткая) and the *diæresis* (надстро́чное двоето́чье).

1. The *accent* (´) serves to distinguish the homonyms or words which though written alike have a different meaning, as also the similar inflections of the words; as: замо́къ, a castle, and замо́къ, a lock; по́дать, the tax, and по́дать, to give; сто́ить, it costs, and сто́ить, he is up; выхо́дить, to obtain, and выхо́дить, to go out; сло́ва, of the word (*gen. sing.*), and слова́, the words (*nom. plur.*). The accent is further placed on the relative pronoun что́, to be distinguished from the conjunction что; e. g. зна́ешь ли что́ тебѣ́ по́лезно, dost thou know what is useful to thee? and зна́ешь ли, что́ тебѣ́ по́лезно уче́ние, dost thou know that study is useful to thee?

2. The *hyphen* (-) is used to mark the connection between two or more words; e. g. Алекса́н-

дро-Нѣвская Лавра, *the monastery of St-Alexander Nevsky*; генераль-маіоръ, *major general*; штабъ-офицеръ, *field officier*; Иванъ-да-Марья, *cow-wheat*. The hyphen is also used with the adverbs formed from the prepositions *so* and *no*, with the compound prepositions (§ 92. 1), and with the particle *no*; as: какъ-то, *such as*; что-то, *something*. It is also used at the end of a line, when a part of a word has to be carried on to the line following.

3. The *sign of brevity* (◌) is placed over the vowel *u* (ѣ), converting it into a semi-vowel, which joined with the preceding vowel forms only a syllable; as: мой, *my*; сей, *this*; нейдѣтъ, *he does not go*; найтъ, *to find*. This mark is also used in prosody to indicate the short syllables, as we shall see when speaking of Russian versification.

4. The *diæresis* (¨) is a double dot which is placed over the vowel *e* (ѳ), when it has the sound of *io* or *o*; e. g. слѣзы, *tears*; жѣлтый, *yellow*. The letter *ë* is also used as the equivalent of the French *eu* and the German *ö*, as in the words Монтескѣ, *Montesquieu*; актёръ, *player* (*Fr. acteur*); Гёте, *Gæthe* (*Germ. Göthe*).

MARKS OF PUNCTUATION.

•95.—The *marks of punctuation* (знаки препинанія) are the same in Russian as in English, viz: the *comma* (запятая ,), the *semicolon* (точка съ запятою ;), the *colon* (двоеточіе :), the *full stop or period* (точка .), the *note of interrogation* (знакъ

вопросительный ?), the *note of exclamation* (знакъ восклицательный !), the *points of suspension* (знакъ пресѣкательный), the *dash* (знакъ мыслеотдѣлительный or тире —), the *parenthesis* (вмѣстительный знакъ or скобки ()), the *inverted commas* or *quotation* (внóсный знакъ or кавычки « ») and the *paragraph* (красная стрóка). The use of these marks of punctuation is nearly the same in all languages.

FOURTH PART

PROSODY.

96.—Prosody consists of two parts: 1) *orthoepy* (сло́гоударе́ние), or the measured pronunciation of syllables and words, and 2) *versification* (стихо́сло-же́ние), which teaches the laws of writing poetry correctly.

Division of
prosody.

ORTHOEPIY.

97.—In the pronunciation of words attention must be paid not only to the particular articulation of each of the letters of which they may be composed, but also and especially to the accented syllable. The *prosodical* or *tonic accent* (уда́ре́ние, § 12) is a stress of the voice which is heard in one of the syllables of a polysyllabic word, so that this syllable shall strike the ear more forcibly than the others and appear to predominate over them. Thus in the words вода́, *water*; не́бо, *the sky*; свобо́да, *liberty*; пре́восходи́тельство, *excellency*, the voice is raised in the syllables *да, не, бо, ду*. The accented syllable is, in prosody, called *strong* or *long*, and the unaccented syllables *weak* or *short*.

Prosodical
or tonic
accent

Place of the
accent.

98.—The accent, in polysyllabic words, is found:
1) on the radical syllable: вѣ[́]дать, *to know*; вѣдо[́]мость, *information*; невѣ[́]жество, *ignorance*; исповѣ[́]дать, *to confess*; увѣ[́]домить, *to inform*; извѣ[́]стіе, *news*; 2) on the termination: вѣд[́]унъ, *a sorcerer*; вѣсто[́]вой, *orderly*; извѣ[́]стѣть, *to notify*; заповѣ[́]днѣй, *interdicted*; 3) on the preposition: вывѣ[́]дать, *to explore*; заповѣ[́]дь, *commandment*; повѣ[́]сть, *a tale*; совѣ[́]сть, *conscience*; 4) on the prefix in compound words: блага[́]говѣ[́]стѣть, *to ring to church*.

These examples show that the accentuation of words in Russian is very variable; and practice and the dictionary can alone enable us to place the accent correctly, as no fixed rules on the subject have hitherto been discovered. We may however remark that a word, when standing alone, may be accented differently to what it is, when joined to other words; thus the pronouns at times lose their accent; again, the nouns and the numerals which have the moveable accent, in the other cases often transfer it to the preposition; in like manner the apocopated adjectives and the verbs transfer it to the negative; e. g. чтѣ[́] отца[́] твоего и ма[́]терь твою, *honour thy father and thy mother*; друзѣ[́]я мои, *my friends*; по[́] берегу, *along the shore*; за[́] моремъ, *beyond the sea*; онъ не[́] веселъ, *he is not gay*; я не[́] бралъ, *I have not taken*. We may here repeat, what we have already indicated in the declensions and conjugations, that, in the change of inflections, the accent is often transferred from one syllable to another.

VERSIFICATION.

99.—The Russian versification, which, like that ^{Tonic versification} of England and Germany, is based on the prosodical accent, is termed *tonic* versification; while that of French language and various other modern tongues, depending on the number of syllables employed, is called *syllabic*, and that of the Greeks and Romans, which is based on quantity or the length and brevity of the syllables, is termed *metrical*.

100.—In the tonic versification the verses are also ^{Foot or metre.} measured by *feet*, as in Greek and Latin. The *foot* (стопа́) or *metre* (разме́ръ), in Russian poetry, is formed by the union of two or three syllables, one of which has the prosodical accent. The feet employed in the structure of Russian verse are six in number, viz:

1. The *iambus* (я́мбъ), composed of two syllables with the prosodical accent on the last, ∪—: зима́, весна́.

2. The *chorcus* (хо́рэй) or *trochee* (трохе́й), consisting of two syllables with the accent on the first, ∪—: ле́то, о́сень.

8. The *pyrrhic* (пи́ррихій), formed of two unaccented syllables, ∪∪: such are the two first syllables of беспо́лезный. The pyrrhic in the middle of a line is used instead of an iambus or a trochee.

4. The *dactyl* (да́ктиль), formed of three syllables with the accent on the first, —∪∪: па́лица, ра́достный.

5. The *amphibrach* (амфибра́хій), formed of three syllables with the accent on the second, ∪—∪: причи́на, цѣ́люю.

6. The *anapæst* (анáпестъ), formed of three syllables with the accent on the last, ∪∪—: человекъ, временá.

Denomina-
tion of the
verses.

101.—The verse or line of poetry takes its name from the nature of the feet of which it is composed. There are verses of six, five, four, three, two feet, and even of one, which are termed *iambic*, *choraic*, *dactylic*, *amphibrachic*, *anapæstic*, *dactylo-choraic*, *anapæsto-iambic*, according as they may be formed of a single one of these metres or of a combination of several. The lines which have not the same number of feet are termed *free verses* (вóльные стихи).

The verses most commonly employed in modern Russian poetry are the following:

1. The *hexameters* or the *dactylo-choraic* verses of six feet, of which the four first are dactyls or trochees, the fifth a dactyl, and the sixth a trochee. This line is an imitation of the Greek and Latin hexameter, from which it differs only in the employment of trochees instead of spondees, which do not exist in Russian. It is used in epic poems, especially in such as are translations from the ancient languages. Ex.

— ∪ ∪ — ∪ ∪ | — ∪ ∪ | — ∪ ∪ | — ∪ ∪ | — ∪ |

Гéкторъ геро́й съ колесни́цы съ ору́жьемъ спряну́тъ на зéмлю
О́стрыя ко́пья коле́бля, поте́къ по ряда́мъ ополче́нiй
Въ бой распаляя Троя́нъ; и возжéтъ жесто́кую сэчу;
Всѣ обрати́лись отъ бѣгства и ста́ли въ лицé Аргивя́намъ.

Гибди́чь.

2. The *iambic* verses of six feet, or *alexandrine* (александрійскіе), are used in great compositions, such as epic and didactic poems, tragedies, comedies, satires, epistles, elegies, idyls, &c.; e. g.

$$\begin{array}{c|c|c|c|c|c} \text{C} & \text{C} & \text{C} & \text{C} & \text{C} & \text{C} \\ \hline \text{C} & \text{C} & \text{C} & \text{C} & \text{C} & \text{C} \end{array} \quad \bullet$$

Ужé блвднѣтъ день, скрывáясь за горóу;
Шумящія стада́ толпáтся надъ рѣкóй.

Жуковскій.

3. The *iambic* verses of five feet, but seldom used; e. g.

Ты говоришь, что мучусь надъ стихомъ,
Что не пишу его, а сочиняю.

Князь Вяземскій.

The iambic verse of five feet is sometimes used alternately with that of six; e. g.

**Какое торжество готовить древний Рим?
Куда текут народа шумны воды?**

Бѣтюшковъ.

4. The *iambic* verses of four feet are used in odes and other lyrical poems; and those of three, two and even a single foot, in songs and other light compositions; e. g.

О ты, что въ горѣсти напрасно
На Бога ропщешь, человекъ!
Внимай, коль въ ревности ужасно
Онъ къ Гову изъ тѣчи рекъ.

Домонбсовъ.

Ужé со тмóю нóщи
Простёрлась тишинá;
Выхóдить изъ-за рóщи
Печáльная лунá.

Кални́сть.

Играй, Адель,
Не знай печали!
Хариты, Лель
Тебя вьнчали.

Ал. Пушкинъ.

Ступай,
Сзывай
Съ лѣсовъ
Всѣхъ псовъ
На край
Ай, ай!

Державинъ.

5. The *free iambic* verses are employed in fables, tales, epigrams, epitaphs, inscriptions, &c.; e. g.

Въ прихожей на полу,
Въ углу,
Пустой мышокъ валялся.
У самыхъ низкихъ слугъ
Онъ на обтирку ногъ нерѣдко помыкался;
Какъ вдругъ
Мышокъ нашъ въ честь попался,
И весь червотцами набитъ:
Въ окóванномъ ларцѣ въ сохранности лежить.

Крыловъ.

6. The *choraic* or *trochaic* verses of six, five, four, three and two feet, sometimes of the same length and sometimes of a different length, are used in various poems. The choraics of four feet are chiefly used in songs; e. g.

— — — — | — — — — | — — — — | — — — — |

Нѣтъ подружки нѣжной, нѣтъ прелестной Лицы!

Всё осиротѣло!

Плачь, Любовь и Дружба! плачь, Гимень унылый!

Счастье улетѣло!

Батюшковъ.

Слѣвсья, Алексѣандръ, Елисаветѣ,
До вечерней тихихъ дней зарі;
И сіяніе въ страну полсвѣта
Съ высоты престола распростри.

Бобрѣвъ.

Стѣнетъ сізый голубѣчекъ,
Стѣнетъ онъ и день и ночь;
Миленькій его дружѣчекъ
Отлетѣлъ надѣлго прочь.

Дмитріевъ.

Всѣхъ цвѣточковъ бѣлъ
Рѣзу я любилъ;
Ею только въ полѣ
Взоръ мой веселилъ.

Дмитріевъ.

Мы сердца́ми
И слеза́ми
Мо́лимъ васъ,
Бо́ги гнѣва
И Э́рева,
Въ стра́шный часъ.

Карамзинъ.

7. The *dactylic* verses, composed of dactyls alone, are only used with two, three or four feet, when longer they become fatiguing to the ear; e. g.

— 00 — 00 — 00 | — 00

Бо́же! Царя́ храни!
Сильный, держа́вный,
Ца́рствуй на сла́ву намъ;
Ца́рствуй на стра́хъ врага́мъ;
Царь правосла́вный.
Бо́же! Царя́ храни!

Жуковскій.

О домова́тая ла́сточка!
Ма́ленька, си́зенька пти́чка!
Гру́дь красноба́ла, коса́точка,
Лѣ́тняя го́стья, пѣ́нничка!

Державинъ.

Рѡза ль, ты рѡзочка, рѡза душистая,
 Всѣмъ ты красавица, рѡза цвѣтокъ,
 Вѣйся, плетися съ лилеей и ландышемъ,
 Вѣйся, плетися въ мой пышный вѣнокъ.

Баронъ Дельвицъ.

8. The *dactylo-choraic* verses of four, three and two feet, are more commonly met with than the pure dactyls, and are used in songs, odes and other lyric poems; e. g.

— 00 | — 00 | — 00 — 01 0

Гдѣ ты, прекрасная, гдѣ обитаешь?
 Тамъ ли, гдѣ пѣсни поётъ Филомела,
 Кроткая нѣчи пѣвица,
 Сидя на миртовой вѣтви?

Карамзинъ.

Пчёлка златая,
 Что ты жужжишь?
 Всѣ вокругъ летая,
 Прочь не летишь.

Державинъ.

9. The *amphibrachic* verses of six and five feet are employed in idyls, epistles, elegies; and those of four, three and two feet in various lyrical compositions; e. g.

Въ часы пированья, при сладостномъ пѣніи струнъ оживлённыхъ,
 Уныніе мрачно на мигъ не оставило милого гостя.
 Снѣдающа горестъ лежитъ глубоко въ его сердцѣ!
 Умолкните, пѣсни! да чистую радость раздѣлять согласно.

Мерзляковъ,

Владыка Морвены

Жилъ въ дѣдовскомъ замкѣ могучій Ордалъ.

Надъ озеромъ стѣны

Зубчатые замокъ съ холма возвышалъ.

Жуковскій.

Въ то время съ весною
Любовь насъ ждала:
Въ то время . . . со мною
Подруга жила.

Мих. Дми́триевъ.

10. The *anapæstic* verses from one to four feet are used in odes and also in fables; e. g.

Посмотри,
И держи ты въ умѣ,
Нѣсь мужикъ пуда три
На продажу свинцѣ въ небольшой котомѣ.

Сумароковъ.

The *anapæstic* line is sometimes used alternately with the *amphibrachic*; e. g.

Не стремись добродѣтель напрасно
Людей отъ неправды унять.
Въ нихъ пороки плодятся всечасно:
Нельзя ихъ ничѣмъ исправлять.

Богдановичъ.

11. The *anapæsto-iambic* verses are oftener employed than the above mentioned; e. g.

Ты бѣги, бѣги, нашъ злодѣй отъ насъ;
Не дадимъ тебѣ поругаться намъ.
Ты взгляни, взгляни на солдатъ своихъ
Между реберъ ихъ ужъ трава растётъ.

Шуле́нниковъ.

102. The *cæsura* (пресе́чѣніе) is a rest which divides the line of poetry into two parts, each of which is called a *hemistich* or half verse. This rest, which is only found in the *iambic* verses of

six and of five feet, and in the trochaic verses of six feet, requires the word to be finished after the third foot in lines of six feet, and after the second in lines of five. Ех.

Изъ мрачныхъ издръ земныхъ | исходятъ бурный пламень;
Кустарники дрожатъ, | о камень бьется камень.

Херасковъ.

И щитъ и мечъ | бросають съ знаменами;
Вездѣ пути | покрыты ихъ костями.

Жуковский.

Здѣсь Гименъ прикованъ, | блѣдный и безгласный,
Гасятъ у гробницы | свой свѣтильникъ ясный.

Батюшковъ.

Though it is not absolutely necessary that the cæsure should be always marked so distinctly, still the syllable terminating the first hemistich can never be united with that commencing the second; thus the cæsure can never come between a preposition and its complement.

Termination
of the
verses.

103.—The syllable terminating a line of poetry may be either strong or accented, or it may be weak or unaccented. In the former case the termination is *masculine*, and in the latter *feminine*; e. g.

Люблю, любить вѣкъ буду!	<i>fem. term.</i>
Кляните страсть мою,	<i>masc. term.</i>
Безжалостныя души,	<i>fem. term.</i>
Жестокия сердца!	<i>masc. term.</i>

Карамзинъ.

From this double termination it results that lines of the same metre have not always the same number of syllables. Iambic verses of six feet have twelve syllables with the masculine termination, and thirteen with the feminine; those of four feet have eight syllables with the masculine and nine

with the feminine. Choraic verses of four feet have seven syllables with the masculine termination, and eight with the feminine. The same rule applies equally to the other verses.

104.—The uniformity of sound in the words terminating lines of poetry forms *rhyme* (рифма), which is also *masculine* or *feminine*, according to the termination of the verse; e. g.

Кто будетъ принимать мой пепелъ отъ косята?	} <i>masc. rhyme.</i>
Кто будетъ безъ тебя, о милая сестра,	
За гробомъ слѣдовать въ одеждѣ погребальной,	} <i>fem. rhyme.</i>
И мѣро изливать надъ ўрною пелачной?	

Батюшковъ.

Rhymes were introduced into the poetry of such modern tongues as could not imitate the Greek and Latin versification, because, the language of poetry differing in them but little from prose, something was requisite to please the ear; in Russian however, where the accent is strongly marked and supplies the place of quantity, rhyme is not absolutely necessary; the same is the case in English and German, while in French rhyme is indispensable. Poetry without rhyme is called *blank verses* (бѣлые стихи). Verses which in Russian poetry are always written without rhyme, are the hexameters and those imitating metres of the ancient languages.

105.—According to the various combinations of the masculine and feminine rhymes, they are divided into *consecutive* (парные стихи), *alternate* (переступные) and *mixed* (смѣшанные). This combination of rhymes is used chiefly in stanzas. A *stanza* or *strophe* consists of a number of verses expressing a complete idea. It varies in length from four to fourteen lines. We here give an example of the strophe of four lines in alternate rhymes, and another of the strophe of fourteen lines, in mixed rhymes and choraic metre.

Бсе вокругъ уныло! Чуть зефиръ весённый
 Памятникъ лобзаетъ;
 Здѣсь въ жилищѣ плача, тихій смерти гений
 Розу обрываетъ.

Батюшковъ.

Разъ въ Крещёнский вечерокъ
 Дѣвушки гадали:
 За ворота башмачокъ,
 Снявъ съ ногъ, бросали;
 Связъ пололи; подъ окномъ
 Слушали; кормили
 Счётнымъ кўрицу зерномъ;
 Яркій воскъ топили;
 Въ чашу съ чистою водою
 Клали перстень золотой,
 Сѣрگی изумрудны;
 Разстилали бѣлый платъ,
 И надъ чашей пѣли въ ладъ
 Пѣсенки подблюдны.

Жуковскій.

Poetic
licenses.

102.—In following the above rules of versification the poet is at time compelled to sacrifice some of the minor principles of grammar, to syncopate terminations, and to place words in an inverted order. These sacrifices to number, harmony, rhyme and elegance, are termed *poetic licenses* (стихотворческія вольности).

CORRECT CONSTRUCTION

EXERCISES

We started for Potsdam on horseback yesterday at six o'clock in the morning. Nothing can be duller than this road; there is nothing but deep sand everywhere and not a single object of interest meets the eye. The view of Potsdam however, and particularly that of Sans-Souci is very fine. We stopped at an hotel, before arriving to the gates of the town. After resting ourselves and ordering our dinner, we entered the town. At the gate our names were written down. On the parade square, opposite the palace, which is adorned with Roman colonnades, the guards were exercising: the men are superb, and the uniforms splendid. The view of the palace from the garden is very fine. The town is generally speaking well built; in the principal street there are several magnificent houses constructed on the plan of the largest palaces of Rome at the expense of the late king: he gave them to any one he chose. At present these vast edifices are empty or only occupied by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under the care of a Russian soldier, who has lived there from the time of the Empress Anne. We had some difficulty in finding him. The decrepit old man was seated in a large arm-chair, and having heard that we are Russians, he extended his hands towards us and exclaimed with a trembling voice: "Glory to God! Glory to God!" He tried at first to speak

Reading-
Exercise.
p 18

with us in Russian; but we had difficulty in understanding each other. We were obliged to repeat almost every word. "Let us go into the temple of God", said he, "and let us pray together, though there is no church festival to-day." My heart was filled with devotion, when I saw the door of this church opened, where solemn silence has reigned so long, scarcely broken by the low sighs and the feeble voice of the old man in prayer, who comes every Sunday to read in this spot the holiest of books, which prepares him for a happy eternity. In the church every thing is neat and clean. The books and the church ornaments are kept in a trunk. The old man arranges them from time to time reverently praying. "It often grieves me to the heart", said he, "to think that after my death, which cannot be far distant, no one will take care of this church." We remained half an hour in this holy spot; then bidding the venerable old man adieu, we wished him a peaceful death.

Karamzin.

Exercises on
declension of
substantives

P. 58.

Хозяинъ сада и хозяйка дома. Садъ хозяина и домъ хозяйки. Рыканіе львовъ; пѣніе соловья; мычаніе быка, вола и коровы; ржаніе лошадей; лай собаки; воркованье голубя; карканье вороновъ; кваканье лягушекъ; вой волка; жужжаніе пчѣль, жуковъ и мухъ; блеяніе барановъ и овецъ. Каминъ безъ огня; окна безъ стѣколъ; каша безъ масла; сѣдла безъ стремень; зарядъ безъ пули; острова и луга безъ деревьевъ; повара, кучера и работницы безъ работы; дѣти безъ матери; солдаты безъ ружей; ружья безъ кремней; статуя безъ рукъ и безъ ушей; медвѣжата и львѣнки безъ шерсти; корабли безъ коекъ; суда безъ веселъ; чай безъ сахара и безъ сливокъ. Пухъ перьевъ; дюжина чашекъ, тарелокъ и стакановъ; сотня форелей; десятокъ дынь; множество гусей, утокъ и лебедей; стада скота; табуны лошадей. Мужья древности, и мужья жѣнь. Цвѣты садовъ, и цвѣта радуги. Листы бумага, и листья деревъ. Зубы во рту, и зубья у гребня. Колѣна Израильтянъ, колѣни у человека, и колѣнья растенія. Локъ сельдей у береговъ Америки былъ очень выгоденъ для Англичанъ, Шведовъ, Голландцевъ и Французовъ.

Совѣтъ друзьямъ. Слава Богу. Горю врагамъ. Приказъ войску. Повиновеніе законамъ. Дай вѣсть гусямъ, курамъ, голубямъ и щенкамъ. Поступать сооответственно правиламъ

чести. Жить прилично состоянію. Законъ, данный какъ дворянамъ, такъ и мѣщанамъ. Противиться желаніямъ дѣтей, и воля родителей. Книги, перья и тетради принадлежать ученикамъ, а не учителямъ. Поля и луга принадлежать отцу и матери, а сады, какъ и лѣса, сыновьямъ и дочерямъ. Нравиться мужчинамъ, и не нравиться женщинамъ. Зелень нравится глазамъ. Картины нравятся сестрамъ, а цвѣты братьямъ. Полезный отечеству; пріятный Богу и людямъ; вѣрный Государю; любезный друзьямъ; милый дѣтямъ. Человѣкъ познаётся по лицу, по голосу, по росту, по походкѣ и по тѣлодвиженіямъ. Туристы путешествуютъ по Швейцаріи, Франціи, Италіи, Германіи, Америкѣ и Египту.

Братья купили дома, сады, деревню и поля, а продали быковъ, коровъ, лошадей и карету. Читаетъ басню, рисовать картину, писать письма, играть пѣсню, чинить перья. Посещать братьевъ и сестеръ, матерей и дочерей, отцовъ и сыновей. Купить шляпу и шапку, перчатки и башмаки, чулки и подвязки. Завоеватель побѣдилъ войска, и покорилъ народъ. Пётръ разбилъ Шведовъ, завоевалъ Эстляндію и Лифляндію, основалъ городъ Санктпетербургъ, и просвѣтилъ Россію. Россіяне побуждали Татаръ, Турокъ, Шведовъ, Французовъ и Персіянъ. Дожди освѣжаютъ землю, а холода истребляютъ саранчу.

Дѣти, будьте прилежны! Иванъ, прійди сюда! Воины, сражайтесь храбро! Боже, спаси Царя! Господи, помилуй меня!

Ученики пишутъ грифельмъ или перомъ и чернилами. Иванъ играетъ съ Алексѣемъ и съ Василіемъ, а Марья играетъ съ Софьею и съ Любовью. Пирогъ съ миндалемъ; горшокъ съ цвѣтами; кадка съ водою; человѣкъ съ умомъ и съ гениемъ; галерея съ картинами. Города съ кремлемъ и гаванью; деревья съ листьями, цвѣтами и плодами; кивера съ султанами; комната съ дверями; хлѣбъ съ солью; вода съ виномъ; вино съ водою; профессоръ съ учениками; письмо съ деньгами. Рисовать карандашѣмъ, писать кистью и красками. Купецъ торгуетъ саломъ, мыломъ, молокомъ, мукою, крупю, винами, пивомъ, сукнами, полотнами и кружевами, а сосѣди купца торгуютъ волами, баранами и лошадьми. Дворцы съ башнями; церкви съ колокольнями; дома съ окнами; зданія съ галереями; полки съ знаменами. Горы изобилуютъ золотомъ, серебромъ, мѣдью, желѣзомъ, ртутью и свинцомъ.

Басни о быкѣ и баранѣ, объ ослѣ и соловьѣ; о кузнечикѣ и муравьѣ; о дубѣ и тростникѣ; о лисицѣ и воронѣ, о волкѣ и ягнѣнкѣ. Сказки объ ангелѣ-хранителѣ, объ Иванѣ и Марьѣ; повѣсти о Сѣргѣи пустынникѣ, о героѣ и гѣни. Говорить объ играхъ, объ урокахъ, о времени, о мѣстѣ, объ обстоятельствахъ. Въ сочиненіи говорить много о чести и безчестіи, о добродѣтели и порокахъ, о храбрости и малодушіи. Въ водѣ живутъ рыбы, лягушки и слизни, а въ лѣсѣ живутъ львы, медвѣди, лисицы и зайцы.

Книги ученика нравятся учителю. Свѣтъ солнца озаряетъ землю лучами. Цвѣта розы пріятны глазамъ. Друзья челоуѣчества дѣлають добро людямъ. Въ садѣ цвѣтутъ розы съ шипами; ибо нѣтъ розы безъ шиповъ. Дѣти умываются водою рѣки. Стаканъ съ водою стоитъ на столѣ комнаты. Слѣзы радости блестятъ въ глазахъ матери. Слава злодѣевъ непродолжительна; но имена благодѣтелей оіяють въ вѣчности. Счастье на землѣ состоитъ въ спокойствіи дѣха и въ чистотѣ совѣсти. Юноши любятъ пѣніе соловья, на берегу ручья, при свѣтѣ луны. Говорить правду есть долгъ дѣтей. Любить Бога сердцемъ и душою. Муравьи и бобры могутъ служить примѣромъ челоуѣку. Поѣздка въ Москву и въ Кіевъ. Входъ въ библіотеку для чтенія. Подай учителю тетрадь со стихами на случай праздника. Надобно вставать утромъ, работать днѣмъ, отдыхать вечеромъ и спать ночью. Громъ пушекъ и звонъ колоколовъ возвестили гражданамъ о прибытіи побѣдителя враговъ отечества.

Exercises on
the adjectives.
p. 83.

Пустой карманъ; карманъ пустъ. Крепкій замокъ; замокъ крепокъ. Вѣрный слуга; слуга былъ вѣренъ. Мягкій воскъ; воскъ мягокъ. Спокойный сонъ; сонъ спокоенъ. Достойный сынъ; сынъ достоинъ. Истинный другъ; другъ истиненъ. Совершенный покой; покой будетъ совершенъ. Прозрачное стекло; стекло прозрачно. Дрѣвнее преданіе; преданіе было дрѣвнее. Теплое лѣто; лѣто будетъ тепло. Тупое перо; перо тупо. Вѣтхая хижина; хижина ветха. Синяя бумага; бумага синя. Новые дома; дома новы. Богатая семья; семья была богата. Красныя знамена; знамена будутъ красны.

Бѣлая бумага; бѣлѣйшая бумага; самая бѣлая бумага. Нева быстра, а Волга быстрее. Молоко жидко, а вода жиже. Глубокий ручей; глубочайшая рѣка. Дома высоки, а башни

выше. Хорошій чай; лучшій чай; самый лучшій чай. Собаки малы; кошки меньше; но мыши малѣйшія. Отецъ молодой; мать моложе; но сестра самая молодая. Сѣно дорого, а солома дороже. Молоко сладко; сахаръ слаще; но медъ самый сладкій.

Бѣловатая бумага; буроватые чернила; черноватая вода; краска синеватая. Буренская коровка; маленькая лошадка; пѣгенькая лошадка; бѣденская дѣвочка; старичекъ старенецъ: старушка добренька. Пребѣлая бумага; бумага бѣлехонька; пресухія дрова; дрова сухощенки.

Хозяинъ обширныхъ садовъ, и хозяйка новаго дома. Стаканъ хорошей воды и краснаго вина; цѣлые горшки свиного сала и еловой смолы. Дѣлай добро бѣднымъ дѣтямъ и дряхлымъ старикамъ, и не ходи по чужимъ полямъ. Вотъ домъ Князя Долгорукаго; вотъ дворецъ Графини Толстой, а вотъ обширныя сады молодыхъ Графовъ Заводовскихъ. Я дивился пріятному пѣнію прошлагодняго соловья. Чинить лебединое перо тупымъ ножикомъ. Вотъ гусиные перья, красныя карандаши, толстыя тетради, дубовыя линейки и большіе циркули, а вотъ суконныя кафтаны, тафтяныя платки, шелковые чулки, пуховыя шляпы, тонкія полотна и тончайшія кружева. Люби непорочныя нравы; читай полезныя книги; чтѣ старыхъ людей; хвали добрыхъ дѣла; береги честнаго и вернаго слугу. Подари новую книгу самому прилежному ученику. Ты хвалишь весеннюю погоду, ясность лѣтнихъ ночей, осеннюю прохладу и зимніе холода. Я уважаю славныхъ мужей и знаменитыхъ полководцевъ древнихъ временъ. Большіе маневры нынѣшняго года будутъ въ Красномъ Селѣ и на Дудергофской Горѣ.

Онъ выѣхалъ изъ отцава дома, и дѣлаетъ добро сестриной дочери. Онъ продалъ женино имѣніе братнину сыну. Посвящать Господни храмы и Божіи церкви. Повиноваться Господней волѣ, и познавать величество Божія имени. Первая Русская Грамматика была написана безсмертнымъ Ломоносовымъ, и Россійская Исторія Николаемъ Михайловичемъ Карамзиннымъ. Сраженія съ Французами происходили подъ Бородинымъ и подъ Борисовымъ. Я живалъ въ Новогородѣ и въ Бѣльбозерѣ. Деревни Княгини Салтыковой лежатъ подъ городомъ Кашинымъ.

Вотъ лѣсъ шуба, соболья шапка, птичье гнѣздó, заячьи мѣхъ и слоновыя зубы. Пудъ оленьяго мяса, аршинъ воловьей кожи, и фунтъ телячьихъ мозговъ. Не ходи по волчьимъ слѣдамъ, и не входи въ медвѣжью берлогу. Разсужденіе о человѣчьемъ глазѣ и о рыбьей головѣ. Онъ торгуетъ рыбнымъ клеемъ, бычачьимъ саломъ, козьими шкурами и пѣтушьями грѣбнями.

Хвастунъ похожъ на сою, украшенную павлиньими перьями. Сосѣдовъ братъ пріѣхалъ изъ дальняго города, а сестра изъ дальней деревни. Иваново платье узко, но Петрово еще уже. Добренькая старушка живётъ въ сырôмъ домѣ, лежащемъ подъ Царицынымъ селомъ. Я купилъ медвѣжью шубу съ бобрóвымъ воротникомъ, и бобрóвую шапку съ шелковою лентою. Вотъ прекрасная книга въ богатомъ софьянномъ переплетѣ. Гдѣ найдёмъ мы примѣръ чистѣйшаго самоотверженія, высшей любви къ отечеству?

Exercises
on the
numerals.
P. 97.

У человѣка одинъ языкъ, одинъ носъ, два глаза, два уха, двѣ щеки, двѣ руки, двѣ ноги, десять пальцевъ на рукѣ и десять пальцевъ на ногѣ, тридцать два зуба, и семь позвонковъ. Въ високóсномъ годѣ четыре времени, двѣнадцать мѣсяцевъ; пятьдесятъ двѣ недѣли и два дня, или триста шестьдесятъ шесть дней, или восемь тысячъ семьсотъ восемьдесятъ четыре часа, или пятьсотъ двадцать семь тысячъ и сорокъ минутъ. Въ книгѣ сто листовъ безъ одного. Оба брата и оба сестры. Полтора часа, и полторы минуты. Два рубля съ половиною и три копейки съ половиною. Въ берковцѣ десять пудовъ; въ пудѣ сорокъ фунтовъ; въ фунтѣ тридцать два лóта; въ лóтѣ три золотника; въ фунтѣ девяносто шесть золотниковъ.

Двѣ пухóвыя шляпы, три шелковые платкá, четыре перочинные ножи́ка, пять фарфóровыхъ чашекъ и шесть прекрасныхъ картинъ. Сіи два чѣрные ворона, тѣ три бѣлые перá, мой четыре новыя книги; эти пять рѣзвыхъ дѣтѣй. Оба бѣдные сироты и оба несчастныя сироты. Двое слугъ, трое мастеровыхъ, четверо дѣтѣй, шестеро солдатъ, двои часы, трои очки, пятеры ножи́цы. Первые полтора часа. Первые сорокъ дней; второе сто ефимковъ, и послѣдняя тысяча гульденовъ.

Я купилъ одного быка и одну лошадь, одинъ столъ и одно зеркало. Двадцать одинъ рубль, пятьдесятъ одна копейка. Тысяча и одна ночь. Молодой человекъ тридцати одного года безъ двадцати одного дня. Не суди о человекѣ по одному проступку и по одной ошибкѣ. Офицеръ съ двадцатью однимъ солдатами. Пётръ Первый и Екатерина Вторая царствовали въ осмнадцатомъ вѣкѣ. Шведы уважаютъ Карла Двенадцатаго, а Французы поставили памятникъ Генриху Четвёртому. Статья была писана пятнадцатаго числа Января мѣсяца тысяча восемьсотъ двадцать третьяго года, и происшествіе относится къ шестому вѣку, а именно къ пятьсотъ семьдесятъ третьему году.

Шкапъ съ дюжиною фарфоровыхъ тарелокъ, или съ двѣнадцатью фарфоровыми тарелками. Дрожки, запряжённые парой воронихъ лошадей, или двумя вороними лошадьми; и карета, запряжённая шестью рыжими лошадьми, или шестёркою рыжихъ лошадей. Городъ лежитъ отсюда въ тысячу верстъ, село въ ста верстахъ, а деревня въ сорокъ верстахъ. Въ Москвѣ было тысяча шестьсотъ церквей, или сорокъ сороковъ церквей. Я довольствуюсь осмидесятью рублями (или двумя сороками рублей) въ мѣсяцъ, то есть девятьюстами шестидесятью рублями въ годъ. Онъ не доживётъ до сорока лѣтъ; и она умерла сорока трёхъ лѣтъ. Она довольна сорока копейками, и она удивилась ста картинами. Онъ не можетъ прожить мѣнѣе ста тысячъ рублей въ годъ. Городъ съ двумя башнями; комодъ съ шестью ящиками; домъ съ сорока окнами; крѣпость со ста пушками; церковь о пяти главахъ; домъ о трёхъ ярусахъ; деревня съ четырьмя вѣтряными мельницами. Я люблю равно обѣихъ сыновей и обѣихъ дочерей. Онъ имѣетъ четверо дѣтей, а она оставила пятеро сиротъ. Мой братъ не могъ сладить съ этими двумя упрямыми лошадьми. Онъ жилъ долго съ своими пятью двоюродными братьями. Къ этому миллиону старыхъ Прусскихъ ефимковъ надобно прибавить тысячу тѣхъ новыхъ рублей.

Каждому по сту рублей и по сороку копѣекъ. Въ некоторыхъ мѣсяцахъ по тридцати дней, а въ другихъ по тридцати одному дню. Въ каждомъ сараѣ было по двѣ кареты, а въ каждой каретѣ по три мужіины и по четыре жёнщины. Каждому по сту по девяносту рублей и по сороку по пяти копѣекъ.

У насъ по двадцати по семи очко́въ. Каждая часть сочиненія продаётся по полу́тору рубля́ серебро́мъ.

По у́тру не до́лжно суди́ть о полу́дни. Въ пе́рвые полдня онъ не зналъ что дѣлать. Въ четыре часа́ по полу́ночи, или въ пять часо́въ по полу́дни. Это случи́лось въ послѣднѣе полу́года тысяча, восемьсо́тъ со́рокъ четвёртаго го́да. Пе́рвые полчаса́ прошли споко́йно. Въ продолженіе пе́рвыхъ получаса́. За мно́ю было́ полтора́ста тысячь рубле́й годова́го дохо́да.

Exercises
on the
pronouns.
p. 107.

Я люблю́ тебя́, а ты меня́ обижа́ешь. Мы уважа́емъ его́, а её мы люби́мъ душе́вно. У меня́ мно́го де́негъ, а у тебя́ нѣтъ ни копейки. Засту́пись за него́, и понаде́йся на неё. Посиди́ со мно́ю, и приходи́ съ нимъ. Скажи́ ей, что́бъ она́ пришла́ ко мнѣ. Безъ него́, безъ ней и безъ васъ жизньъ мнѣ скучна́. Я не ви́жу ихъ, а я сдѣлаю́ всё для́ нихъ. Мы уважа́емъ васъ, а вы забыли́ насъ. Будь во мнѣ увѣренъ: я погово́рю о тебѣ́. Мнѣ пріятно́ быть съ не́ю. Я не до́вѣряю себѣ́, а ты дово́ленъ собою́. Мы бережѣ́мъ себя́, а онѣ себѣ́ вредя́тъ.

Мой бра́тъ, твоя́ сестра́ и его́ сынъ вмѣстѣ учи́лись. Я стара́юсь угоди́ть ва́шему учи́телю и на́шему смотре́телю. Мой до́мъ краси́вѣе твоего́, а твоя́ соба́ка ме́ньше мое́й. Я живу́ безъ нихъ, и могу́ обойтись безъ ихъ по́мощи. Не хвали́сь свои́ми труда́ми, а поду́май о свои́хъ лѣта́хъ. Подо́йди къ моему́ столу́, и подари́ де́негъ своѣй сестрѣ́. Мы говори́мъ о свои́хъ дѣла́хъ, а вы занима́етесь свои́мъ уро́комъ. Уче́ніе го́рько, но пло́ды его́ сла́дки. Твои́ сады́ прекра́сны; я уди́вляюсь ихъ краси́вотамъ.

Ви́дишь ли́ э́ту соба́ку и э́того ко́та, э́тихъ люде́й и тѣхъ дере́вьевъ? Въ э́тихъ земля́хъ нѣтъ зо́лота, и въ тѣхъ нѣтъ серебра́. Я слы́шалъ э́то отъ ва́шего бра́та, но я э́тому не вѣ́рю. Я хвалю́ ва́ше намѣ́реніе; да́вно я предви́дѣлъ о́ное. Да́вно ли ты живѣ́шь въ семъ го́родѣ? Я уди́вляюсь э́тому са́ду, а то́тъ лу́чше. Э́ти пе́рья ту́пы; сѣи́ дома́ ка́менные; тѣ у́лицы узки́. Та́кіе глаза́ прони́цательны; та́кія дѣла́ не прино́сятъ че́сти. Таковы́ люди́.

Челове́къ, кото́раго вы ви́дите, о́чень уме́нь. Кни́га, кото́рую вы чита́ете, о́чень пріятна́. Я зна́ю дѣло́, о кото́ромъ вы говори́те. Во́да, кото́рою я мо́юсь, о́чень холо́дна. Береги́сь того́, кто льсти́тъ тебѣ́. То́тъ, у ко́го мно́го дѣла́, не ду́маетъ о заба́вахъ. Учи́тесь тому́, че́го вы не зна́ете.

Вотъ такое сукно, какое я купилъ. Какое былъ военачальникъ, таковы и воины. Вотъ другъ, въ чьихъ рукахъ моя судьба. Слушайся того, въ чьемъ домѣ ты жилъ. Вотъ книга, какихъ мало, и случай, каковыя рѣдки.

Который часъ, и въ которомъ часу прийдешь? Какими книгами занимаешься, и какіе люди здѣсь живутъ? Подъ которыми начальникомъ ты служишь, и какому языку ты учишься? Чьи эти дома? Съ чего позволенія ты вышелъ со двора? Я не видалъ, чью шляпу бросили на полъ. Я не знаю, съ чьими детьми онъ гуляетъ. О чемъ ты заботишься, и чѣмъ я заслужилъ твою дружбу? Съ чѣмъ можно поздравить тебя, и отъ чего ты получилъ эти деньги? Сколько верстъ отъ этого города до того? Изъ сколькихъ томовъ состоитъ сіе сочиненіе? По сколько рублей достанется вамъ изъ этой прибыли?

Ты самъ согласишься со мною: самый звукъ его голоса пріятенъ. Я нанимаю сію квартиру у самого хозяина. Самые пороки находятъ у васъ извпненіе. Онъ всегда говоритъ о себѣ самомъ. Вы недовольны собою самими. Мы видѣли её самоё. Самая смерть не страшна. Мы всѣ довольствуемся однимъ жалованіемъ. Такъ думаютъ одиѣ жѣнщины. Мы оба хотимъ служить единому Богу. Въ каждомъ собраніи были граждане обоего пола. Они разсыяны по всему свѣту. Надобно привыкать ко всякой пищѣ.

Нѣтъ никого здѣсь; не проси помощи ни у когô. Ты не знаешь ничего, и это не годится ни къ чему. Учись чему нибудь, и скажи это кому нибудь. Я не продамъ своего дома ни за что, и вы продали свой за ничто. Изъ ничего не сдѣлаешь ничего. Въ теченіе нѣсколькихъ мѣсяцевъ онъ ежедневно купалъ по нѣскольку сотъ душъ.

Объ сестры дурно говорятъ другъ о другѣ. Англичане и Французы ненавидятъ другъ друга. Мы ходимъ гулять другъ съ другомъ. Сіи дома лежатъ одинъ за другимъ. Доски набросаны одна съ другою.

Я дѣлаю добро, сколько я желаю. Ты желаешь учиться. Онъ думаетъ, что знаетъ всѣ науки, и хвастаетъ своими успѣхами. Мы не дерзваемъ вѣрить вашимъ словамъ, хотя вы говорите правду. Мой сосѣди питаются однимъ хлѣбомъ, и уповаютъ на Провидѣніе. Вы торгуете сукномъ, и вы требуете

многого. Голубь воркуетъ; горлица стонетъ; собака лаетъ; щенки брешутъ; лягушки квакають; вороны каркають; лвы рыкають; олень токуетъ; куры кудахчутъ; кошка мяучить; быки мычатъ; пчела жужжитъ; змѣя шипитъ; орлы трубятъ; соловей щебечутъ; овцы блеютъ; свиньи хрюкають; лисица визжитъ; осёл ревётъ; калкунъ клохчетъ; перепёлка ваваетъ; птухъ кукурекаетъ; сорока скрекощетъ; попугай болтаетъ. Громъ гремитъ; вода кипитъ; дѣри скрипятъ; ручьи жужжатъ; огонь трещитъ; звѣзды сверкають; солнце свѣтитъ; пчѣлы роются; алмазы блестятъ; сухіе листья хрущатъ; вѣтеръ свистаетъ; снѣгъ таетъ. Солнце озаряетъ землю своими лучами, грѣетъ и живитъ её.* Земля обращается вкругъ солнца. Вы напрасно горюете.

Я гулялъ вчера по берегу рѣки, когда солнце садилось. Моя сестра сидѣла подѣ деревомъ, которое качалось вѣтромъ. Вчера мы много работали, читали, писали и рисовали. Овцы мрутъ отъ стужи. Его мать давно умерла. Непріатели заперли его въ крѣпости. Этотъ человекъ ослѣпъ, и его жена оглохла. Мои деревья высохли и мои цвѣты завяли.

Москва долго будетъ красоваться во главѣ городовъ Россіи. Ты будешь играть, и я буду писать. Россійское государство будетъ непрерывно возвышаться, и всегда приобретётъ болѣе силы и славы. Великій государь никогда не умрѣтъ.

Дѣлай, что тебѣ говорятъ, и не думай упрямиться. Не теряй надежды, и уповай на Бога, Ступайте домой, и не толкуйте столько. Не трать времени, и не мучь жинотныхъ. Говорите всегда правду, и не спорьте о пустякахъ.

Соловей поётъ; лошадь ржётъ; волкъ воетъ. Есть звѣри, которые спятъ всю зиму. Ты берѣшь много на себя, и я не берусь за это дѣло. Зачѣмъ вы имѣете эту книгу? Онъ живётъ въ Москвѣ, и слывётъ богатымъ человекомъ. Пастухъ стрижётъ овецъ; крестьяне прядутъ лёнъ и ткутъ холстъ. Онъ хочетъ спать, и вы хотите играть. Мой сосѣдъ берѣгъ меня, какъ роднаго сына, и не могъ со мною, разстаться. Непріатели сожгли многіе города; они увлеклись злобою и мщеніемъ. Пастухъ пасъ овецъ на лугу. Я пошлю за лѣкаремъ, и ты пришлѣшь мнѣ денегъ. Этотъ городъ цвѣтѣтъ, и онъ долго будетъ цвѣсти сіюю, и богатствомъ. Я дамъ

тебѣ книгу, а что ты дашь мнѣ? Ты не можешь говорить: что онъ дастъ мнѣ за это? Не бери на себя того, чего ты не можешь исполнить. Дѣти, живите мирно, не клянитесь, никогда не лгите, и ведите себя хорошенько.

Звѣри ходятъ и бѣгаютъ, птицы летаютъ, рыбы плаваютъ, и черви ползаютъ. Посмотри, куда идётъ солдатъ; за нимъ бѣжитъ собака. Видишь, какъ быстро летитъ эта ласточка; онъ всегда такъ летаетъ. Сей морякъ долго плавалъ по Чёрному Морю. Что тамъ плывётъ на водѣ? Жёны Славянъ носили воду и таскали дрова. Что ты несёшь въ этомъ мышкѣ? Смотри, какую вязанку дровъ этотъ человекъ тащить. Видѣли тогда, чего не видѣли дотолѣ.

Непріятель ринулся въ городъ и кинулся на корысть. Молнія засверкала. Молнія сверкнула, грянулъ сильный громъ, земля дрогнула, церковь затряслась. Братъ мой лёгъ и захрапѣлъ; онъ громко храпнулъ и проснулся. Могу ли надѣяться, что лира моя тронетъ ещё ваше хладное сердце? Солнце заблестало, но не надолго: блеснуло и скрылось. Мы выбросали за окно весь соръ; въ соръ мы выбросили и важную бумагу.

Прошлаго года я хаживалъ въ городъ. Сократъ говаривалъ. Нѣмцы издавна живали въ Новогородѣ. Живучи въ Москвѣ, я взжалъ въ Троицкую Лавру. Въ молодыя лѣта я живалъ въ деревнѣ.

Если бы камни говорить могли, онѣ научили бы тебя осторожности. Если бы кто нибудь вошёлъ къ намъ въ эту минуту, онъ увидѣлъ бы насъ въ отчаяніи, и слышалъ бы наши стенанія и наши вздохи. Есть мало предметовъ въ свѣтѣ, на которые я не обращалъ бы вниманія. Нѣ было такого каменнаго сердца, которое не изливалось бы въ слезахъ.

Солдатъ этотъ служилъ долго, и выслужилъ пенсію. Не всякій выслужить её съ такимъ отличіемъ. Онъ бывалъ во многихъ сраженіяхъ, и вездѣ отличался блистательною храбростью. Особенно отличился онъ при взятіи одной непріятельской батарееи. Онъ первый взобрался на брустверь, убилъ непріятельскаго солдата и взялъ пушку. За это его наградили орденомъ. Потомъ награждали его и другими отличіями. Теперь отправится онъ въ родину, поселится въ своей семьѣ, и будетъ разсказывать о своихъ походахъ, какъ хаживалъ на Турокъ и Французовъ, какъ бивалъ враговъ.

какъ терпѣлъ голодъ, страдалъ отъ ранъ, и утѣшался мыслію, что служить своему Государю сердцемъ и душою. Уповай на меня.

Exercises
on the
participles.
p. 176.

Человѣкъ, любящій правду, ненавидитъ ложь. Купающееся дитя; собака, бросающаяся на прохожихъ. Купецъ, получающій товары изъ Лондона, продавалъ ихъ выгодно. Купецъ, получившій товары изъ Лондона, продалъ ихъ выгодно. Страждущій болѣзнію, ищетъ облегченія. Зажигъ потушшую свѣчу, и вытри замёрзшее стекло. Слава герою, спасающему своё отечество. Рыкающій левъ, мычащій быкъ, лающая собака, поющій пѣтухъ, воркующій голубь, выражаютъ свои чувства и желанія.

Море, волнуемое вѣтрами, устрашаетъ пловцовъ. Дочь, любимая отцемъ, старается заслуживать его любовь. Должно помогать несчастному, гонимому судьбою и преследуемому неудачами. Это снятое молоко, и вотъ третій табакъ. Это заряженное ружьё. На рынкѣ продаются битые гуси, смолёныя верёвки, откормленныя поросята и стриженныя овцы.

Россія обитаема многими народами. Добрые государи любимы своими подданными, и уважаемы соседями. Татары были побѣждены и разбиты на Куликовомъ полѣ. Труды твои будутъ увѣнчаны успѣхомъ. Имена бывають склоняемы, а глаголы спрягаемы. Сей великій полководецъ будетъ чтимъ въ потомствѣ. Москва была разорена и сожжена врагами. Это ружьё заряжено. Эта книга прекрасно переплетена.

Exercises on
adverbs and
gerunds.
p. 181.

Подй сюда, ибо я здѣсь живу. Гдѣ вашъ братъ? Его нѣтъ дома. Куда онъ поѣхалъ вчера вечеромъ? Ты судишь умно, а братъ твой судить умнѣе. Я хожу шибко, а ты ходишь шибче. Вы говорите по-русски чисто, а сестрица ваша ещё чище. Завтра поѣдемъ мы далѣко, а чрезъ годъ ещё далѣе. Ты поѣшь хорошо, но она поѣтъ лучше. Я прошу васъ убѣдительнѣе. Я благодарю васъ покорнѣе.

Гуляя на берегу рѣки, я наслаждаюсь прохладою вѣсера. Жалѣя о несчастныхъ, старайтесь помогать имъ. Я васъ учу, желая вамъ добра, и надѣясь, что вы успѣете въ наукахъ. Не умиа сдѣлать чего вибудь, проси совѣта, не краснѣя. Дѣлай добро, не бойсь никого. Не должно зсть лежа. Служа отечеству и умирая за него, мы исполняемъ свой долгъ.

Получивъ письмо ваше, и узнавъ, чего вы желаете, я немедленно отвѣчалъ. Отобѣдавши, останься дома. Написавши письмо, положивши въ кувертъ и запечатавши, отдай его на почту. Пришедши домой, я сѣлъ писать. Женівшись, онъ поѣхалъ въ деревню. Просидѣвши часъ у него, я пошелъ домой; раздѣвшись и легши, я скоро уснулъ.

Безъ надежды нельзя жить въ свѣтъ. Отъ рѣки до лѣсу двѣ версты. О чѣмъ вы говорите? Мы трудимся для общаго блага. Между домомъ и садомъ пространный дворъ съ конюшнями. Бога ради не унывай. Любовь къ государю и отечеству. Онъ живѣтъ у своего дяди. Солдатъ выскочилъ изъ-за куста. Лучъ солнечный проникаетъ сквозь воду. Этотъ человѣкъ при смерти. Птица летаетъ подъ облаками. Я положилъ книгу подъ столъ. Садитесь за столъ, и сидите за столомъ. Братъ мой ѣдетъ въ Москву, потому что его жена живѣтъ въ Москвѣ. Орелъ сидитъ на деревѣ. Эта рюмка разбилась на мелкія части. Я досажуюсь на брата моего за его лѣность. Не заботься о чужихъ дѣлахъ. Мой другъ ушибся объ уголъ стола. Вода течетъ съ крови. Вотъ деревья съ листьями, но безъ цвѣтовъ. Эта собака будетъ съ корову. Дѣти бѣгаютъ по двору и по саду. Мы работали отъ перваго по пятое число Августа. Онъ носитъ трауръ по своему брату.

Мой дядя родился и жилъ въ Москвѣ, а не въ Твери. Знаешь ли что нашъ учитель нездоровъ? Ежели вы не придете, то я осержусь. Спроси у него, хочетъ ли онъ ѣхать, или намзревается остаться дома. Онъ заботится болѣе о братѣ нежели о сестрѣ. Пріятнѣе дѣлать добро другимъ, чѣмъ самому получать благотворенія. Пусть онъ придетъ; пускай они уйдутъ. Да солнце васъ не застанетъ на ложѣ. Да здравствуетъ Царь. Чѣмъ прилежнѣе ты будешь учиться, тѣмъ легче будетъ для тебя ученіе.

Зима пріятна. Люди суть смертны. Новгородъ былъ богатымъ. Россія есть обширная имперія. Волга есть царица рѣкъ Русскихъ. Пріятель мой, вы будете довольны. У насъ есть большіе запасы. У меня завтра будутъ деньги. Ея Величество (Императрица) выѣхала. Его Превосходительство (Генералъ) уѣхалъ. Его Императорское Высочество (Великій Князь) былъ доволенъ. Географія и Исторія суть

Exercises on
the preposi-
tions. p.185.

Exercises on
the conjunc-
tions. p.188.

Exercises on
the concord
of words.
P. 192.

весьма полезныя знанія. Молчать трудно. Сколько было тамъ дѣтей? Москва знаменита; городъ Москва знаменитъ. Китай многолюднѣе; государство Китай многолудно. У него есть тридцать одна лошадь. Книга, которую вы читаете, очень забавна. Вотъ человекъ, кѣими трудами пользуемся.

Exercises on
dependence
of words,
p. 200.

Вода есть стихія. Александръ Македонскій былъ великій полководецъ. Татары были свирѣпы. Мои два офицеръ; мой дядь былъ тогда офицеромъ. Говорятъ, что кометы были или еще будутъ планетами.

Дождь освяжаетъ землю. Злодѣи ненавидятъ честныхъ людей. Буря, опустошившая наши поля, разорила многихъ поселянъ. Говори всегда правду. Мой братъ былъ боленъ всю зиму. Я ѣхалъ цѣлую версту верхомъ. Тебя хвалятъ за прилежаніе. Онъ ударился объ стѣну. Мы сидимъ въ водѣ по шею. Сынъ ростомъ съ отца, и дочь почти съ мать.

Скупецъ предпочитаетъ деньги славу, а воинъ славу деньгамъ. Молнія предшествуетъ грому. Дивлюсь вашему терпѣнію. Нравятся ли вамъ эти картины. Не мсти твоему непріятелю, и дѣлай добро обидѣвшему тебя. Быть чуду. Литься горючимъ слезамъ. Ребенку хочется пить. Сильному человеку не прилично обижать слабаго. Подражаніе Иисусу Христу. Любовь къ добродѣтели и ненависть къ пороку.

Вѣжу глазами, осязаю руками, слышу ушами, обоняю носомъ, вкушаю языкомъ. Измаилъ былъ взятъ Суворовымъ, и Очаковъ Потѣмкинскимъ. Этихъ офицеровъ всѣ называютъ героями. Больной едва шевелитъ губы (или губами). Гнушаюсь обманомъ и ложію. Здѣсь дышать чистымъ воздухомъ. Пожертвованіе жизнью за Государа и отечество. Онъ добръ сердцемъ, но слабъ головою. Утромъ надобно вставать, днемъ работать, вечеромъ отдыхать, и ночью спать. Помири моего друга съ его дядею. Имѣю честь поздравить васъ съ вашими успѣхами.

Сынъ моего искреннаго друга вчера уѣхалъ. Дѣти большаго ума нерѣдко бывають хилы. Составленъ списокъ офицерамъ нашей дивизіи. Печеніе хлѣба. Я курилъ фунтъ чаю и сажень дровъ. Столько трудовъ и заботъ пропало попустому. Русскіе взяли Парижъ осьмнадцатаго Марта тысяча восемьсотъ четырнадцатаго года. Я не емъ хлѣба, но пью воду. Я емъ хлѣбъ, но не пью воды. Я не получалъ ни

письма, ни посылки. Въ этомъ письмѣ нѣтъ ни одной ошибки. Достань мнѣ денегъ. Воины желаютъ битвы и ищутъ славы. Славолюбецъ жаждетъ почестей. Ты хочешь богатства, и бойшься труда. Бочка полна вина. Добрый человекъ чуждъ злобы и зависти. Золото дороже серебра; свинецъ тяжелѣе желѣза. Онъ проситъ милостины ради Христа. О тдыхъ пріятенъ послѣ работы. Вдоль этого берега тянется цѣпь горъ. Волки бродятъ около деревни.

Мой братъ хранитъ присутствіе духа при всѣхъ непріятностяхъ въ жизни. Сей городъ построенъ на крутомъ берегу быстрой рѣки. Церковь о пяти главахъ. Онъ плачетъ по своему отцу.

Волшебница.

Одна вдова имѣла двухъ дочерей: старшая была похожа на свою мать и лицѣмъ и нравомъ, то есть, она была такъ же дурна и такъ же зла, какъ ея мать. Никто не любилъ ихъ: всѣ отъ нихъ бѣжали. Меньшая же была прекрасна и добродушна. Всѣ ея любили. Но злая мать и злая сестра ея ненавидѣли; безпрестанно бранили; одна она должна была работать въ домѣ, топить печь, мести горницы, стрѣпать въ кѣхнѣ. Бѣдняжка плакала съ утра до вечера, но не лѣнилась работать; была послушна, терпѣлива, и всё то было напрасно, ибо ничѣмъ не могла угодить на злую мать и на злую сестру свою.

Ежедневно эта бѣдная дѣвушка должна была, съ большимъ кувшиномъ, ходить за водою въ ближнюю рощу, въ которой находился чистый источникъ. Однажды пошла она, по обыкновенію, къ этому источнику. День былъ очень жарокъ. Наполнивъ кувшинъ водою, она возвращалась домой. Вдругъ видитъ передъ собою старушку. «Дитя моё!» — сказала ей старушка: — «дай мнѣ напиться. Я устала; мнѣ жарко.» — «Съ охотою, бабушка!» сказала дѣвушка: «вотъ! напейся!» И она подала старушкѣ кувшинъ.

Старушка отъ слабости сѣла на траву, а молодая красавица стала передъ нею на колѣни, и осторожно поддѣрживала кувшинъ, пока она пила воду. — «Благодарю тебя, милая!»

сказала старушка, напившись: «Вижу, что ты доброе, ласковое дитя, и хочу тебя наградить за твою услужливость. Знай же, я волшебница, и нарочно взяла на себя вид старушки, чтобы тебя испытать. Радуюсь, что ты такая добрая, и вот, что я хочу для тебя сделать: всякий раз, когда ты скажешь слово, изо рта у тебя выпадет или прекрасный цветок, или драгоценный камень, или большая жемчужина. Прости, дружок!» И волшебница исчезла.

Прекрасная девушка возвратилась домой. «Где ты так долго была?» спросила у ней с сердцем мать. — «Что ты так долго делала в роще?» закричала злая сестра. — «Виновата, замыкалась!» отвечала бедняжка, и в ту самую минуту с прекрасных губ ее скатились два розы, две жемчужины и два большие изумруда. — «Что я вижу?» воскликнула удивленная мать. «Это цветы! Это драгоценные камни! Что с тобою случилось!» — Красавица простодушно рассказала ей о своей встрече с волшебницею, а между тем цветы, алмазы и жемчуг так и сыпались с губ ее. — «Хорошо же!» проворчала мать: «завтра пошлю в рощу старшую мою дочь, и с нею то же будет.»

И на другое утро, она сказала своей дочери: «Нынче пойдешь за водою ты: возьми кувшин; но смотри же, если встретишь у источника старушку, дай ей напиток и приласкайся к ней хорошенько.» Злая девчонка нахмурилась, с досадою взяла кувшин; нехотя пошла в рощу, и во всю дорогу ворчала. Старушка сидела уже у источника. «Зачерпни мне воды, моя милая!» сказала она девочке: «жарко, хочу напиться.» — «Как бы не так! Я не за тем пришла сюда, чтобы услуживать старым бродягам. Напьюсь и без тебя!» — «Какая же ты грубая!» сказала ей старушка: «Я накажу тебя. С этих пор, при каждом слов твоём, будет выпадать у тебя изо рта или змея или лягушка.» Она исчезла, а злая девчонка побжала домой, разбивши с досады кувшин свой. «Что скажешь, милая дочка!» спросила мать, увидев её издалека. — «Нечего сказать!» отвечала дочь, и вдруг выскочили изо рта ее две змеи и две жабы! — «Что я вижу! какой страх!» закричала мать. «Но во всем этом виновата твоя сестра! Я дам ей знать.» И он бросились бить меньшую дочь. •

Она, испугавшись угрозы, скрылась въ рощу, долго бѣжала, не смѣя оглянуться, забѣжала далѣко, и наконецъ потеряла дорогу. Но это было къ ея счастію. Царскій сынъ, который тутъ забавлялся охотою, находился въ это время въ рощѣ; онъ увидѣлъ красавицу, которая, сѣдя на травѣ, горько плакала. — «Что съ тобою сдѣлалось? о чёмъ ты плачешь, милая?» спросилъ онъ, взявъ её ласково за руку. — «Божѣ мой! какъ мнѣ не плакать! Матушка выгнала меня изъ дому.» Она говорила, а цвѣты и драгоценные камни сыпались съ ея розовыхъ губъ, и слёзы обращались въ жемчужины. — «Что это значить?» спросилъ царскій сынъ: «отъ чего эти цвѣты, жемчуги и камни?» Бѣдняжка разсказала царскому сыну о томъ, что съ нею случилось. — Онъ полюбилъ её, и полюбилъ ещё болѣе за то, что она была такъ добра и мила, нежели за ея цвѣты и драгоценные камни. Онъ взялъ её съ собою, представилъ её Царю, отцу своему, которому она также понравилась, и Царь позволилъ сыну на ней жениться. Такимъ образомъ она сдѣлалась Царевною, а по смерти Царя, когда ея мужъ взошѣлъ на отцовскій престолъ, Царицею, и была Царицею доброю. А злая сестра ея? что сдѣлалось съ нею? — Она жалостнымъ образомъ кончила свою жизнь. Мать, которую она безпрестанно сердила и огорчала, принуждена была её выгнать изъ дому; никто не хотѣлъ ей дать пристанища, и она скрылась въ лѣсъ, гдѣ скоро умерла съ досады и голода.





TABLE OF CONTENTS

FIRST PART

LEXICOLOGY.

	Page
Division of the Grammar	1
Sounds or letters	2
Alphabet	2
Division of the letters	6
Pronunciation of the letters	7
Vowels	7
Semi-vowels	11
Consonants	13
Syllables and words	17
Tonic accent	17
<i>Reading-Exercise</i>	18
Elements of speech	22
Division of words	23
Roots of words	24
Inflections of words	26
Metaplasms of words	26
Permutation of letters	26
Epenthesis and prosthesis	28
Apocope and Syncope	29
THE SUBSTANTIVE	29
Division of substantives	29
Properties of nouns	30

	Page
Genders	30
Aspects	34
Numbers	36
Cases	37
Declension of substantives	39
Regular substantives	39
Rules of the declensions	40
General rules	41
Special rules	42
Paradigms of the declensions of substantives	43
First declension	43
Second declension	48
Third declension	50
Irregular nouns	54
<i>Exercises in the declension of substantives</i>	58
THE ADJECTIVE	65
Division of the adjectives	65
Qualifying adjectives	65
Possessive adjectives	65
Properties of adjectives	67
Gender, number, case	68
Apocope of the termination	68
Degrees of signification	69
Declension of adjectives	75
Paradigms of the declensions of adjectives	76
First declension	78
Second declension	80
Third declension	83
<i>Exercises on the adjectives</i>	83
THE NUMERALS	88
Division of numerals	88
Cardinal and ordinal numerals	89
Declension of the numerals	91
Paradigms of the declension of the numerals	92
Special rules of the numerals	95
<i>Exercises on the numerals</i>	97
THE PRONOUN	102
Division of the pronouns	102

	Page
Paradigms of the declension of the pronouns . . .	104
Declension of the pronouns	105
<i>Exercises on the pronouns</i>	107
THE VERB	112
Division of verbs	112
Inflections of the verb	113
Tenses	113
Aspects	113
Moods	116
Persons, numbers and genders	117
Forms derived from the verb	118
Conjugation	118
Regular verbs	122
Formation of the inflections of the verb	123
Paradigms of the conjugations of the regular verbs .	125
First conjugation	128
Second conjugation	130
Third conjugation	136
Irregular verbs	137
Conjugation of irregular verbs	138
Delineation of verbs	142
Simple verbs	143
Prepositional verbs	150
<i>Exercises on the verbs</i>	166
THE PARTICIPLE	173
Division of the participles	173
Active and neuter participles	173
Passive participles	174
Declension of the participles	175
Passive verbs	176
<i>Exercises on the participles</i>	176
THE ADVERB AND THE GERUND	178
Division of the adverbs	178
Formation of the adverbs	179
Degrees of comparison	180
Gerunds	180
<i>Exercises on the adverbs and the gerunds</i>	181
THE PREPOSITION	183

	Page
Division of the prepositions	183
Government of the prepositions	185
<i>Exercises on the prepositions</i>	185
THE CONJUNCTION	187
<i>Exercises on the conjunctions</i>	188
THE INTERJECTION	188

SECOND PART

SYNTAX.

Division of syntax	189
CONCORD OF WORDS	189
<i>Exercises on the concord of words</i>	192
DEPENDENCE OF WORDS	193
Nominative	194
Vocative	195
Accusative	195
Dative	196
Instrumental	197
Genitive	198
Prepositional	200
<i>Exercises on the dependence of words</i>	200
CONSTRUCTION	210

THIRD PART

ORTHOGRAPHY.

USE OF THE LETTERS	212
Vowels	212
Semi-vowels	215
Consonants	215
Doubling of consonants	218
Capital letters	219
DIVISION OF WORDS INTO SYLLABLES	219
ORTHOGRAPHY OF ISOLATED WORDS	220
Russian words	220
Foreign words	223
ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS	226
MARKS OF PUNCTUATION	227

FOURTH PART

PROSODY.

	Page
Division of prosody	229
ORTHOEPY	229
Prosodical or tonic accent	229
Place of the accent	230
VERSIFICATION	231
Tonic versification	231
Foot or metre	231
Denomination of the verses	232
Cæsura	237
Termination of the verses	238
Rhyme	239
Stanza or strophe	239
Poetic licenses	240
SOLUTION OF THE EXERCISES	241



LEIPZIG,—PRINTED BY W. DRUGULIN.

